



My Lilly

By

Mapule Molwele

Hey my name is Nthombenhle Lilly Khumalo I'm the last born of khumkani Khalid Khumalo and Mathapelo Zendaya Unokhanya Thandolwethu Khumalo, I have older siblings which is 8 boys and 2 girls you will get to know them as time goes by. Well I'm turning 17 and I'll be doing my first year as a business science student and I want to go study in joburg because I want to learn how to be independent, one thing I love about our family is that we very close especially us as siblings all 10 of them study here in Cape town my parents bought

them a huge house so that they can have some sort of freedom but that is not enough for me I do not want to live with them not that I don't like them it's just I feel like I'm alone I've always felt like that, something is missing in me and know its because my twin died before I could even meet her. All my siblings are each others best friends yes there is 10 of us but amongst them they have that one person they click with like my sisters are identical twins so they do everything together even with my brothers it's the same, they do include me in their things and everything but I just don't fit in I've tried so many times but it's just not working and I also don't tell them that I sometimes feel alone and lost, but what I love the most is how Owami (my mother that's how we call her we don't call her mom or mommy and it's my dads fault) as I was saying I love how Owami is able to see right through me I do not have to explain myself to her I've always felt like the odd one out and having eyes that have different colors did not even help yes my siblings were there for me whenever some kids tried to bully me and I also know how to stand

up for myself it's just I never vocally told my mom how I felt different from all her kids but she always knew somehow and always knew what to say to make me feel better, enough about that let me give you a short description of myself. I'm short very short, very light skinned, I have long poufy hair I always braid it, I have deep dimples they always show when I speak, laugh or make some facial expressions, my one eye is black and another is bright blue, I have a killer body and since I'm into gymnastics they made my body look nice even though my ass and hips are big but they are toned I also have small boobs and a small waist I actually have a cute six-pack. My hobbies are ridding horses my grandfather bought me a white one apparently I got the love of ridding them from my grandmother his wife and I also kind of look like her I saw her pictures she was white. I'm also into knives I even have a collection and I'm good at using them well the love of knives came from being trained by my parents on how to fight, use guns and knives they always tell us it's just to protect ourselves but I know that my mother is

training us to take over her black eye seat and honestly I don't want it I want to start my own thing just like she did I don't think my other siblings are aware that our parents are training us for the underworld expect me and Thandokuhle I call him kuhle I'm actually much closer to him maybe because his very quiet and hardly talk most of the time when we spend the day together it's always in comfortable silence I think it's our way of communicating even when one of us is angry, sad or happy for some reason we always find ourselves together hiding from everyone and just chilling in silence most of the time we watch the stars at our rooftop we always find each other there. I'm also very close to my grandfather maybe because I remind him of my grandmother we do a lot of things together he sometimes takes me to his business meetings and I chill there looking like his PA that's how I fell in love with the business world hence I'll be studying business science next year.

Now its just after new year's and we all chilling at home even my cousins are here uncle Nkosis kids they are sextuplets 3 boys 3 girls we pretty close

we even call uncle Nkosi dad and my dad is daddy. My parents are also here cuddling I'm chilling next to Kuhle with my head on his shoulder.

Owami: so are you quints excited about going to varsity?

Well I'm part of the quintuplets its 4 boys and me according to mom we were sextuplets and she miscarried one which is my twin I really wish she was here. Back to this topic all my brothers say how excited they are and everything I'm just sitting here looking at them and I didn't even apply to study here in Cape town I applied in one university and it's in Johannesburg lucky I also applied for a bursary and I got it a full bursary from one of the best accounting firms in Africa it's called H Accounting. I know my parents can afford to pay for me but I did that just incase they refuse then I have a solid plan I also have a lot of money saved up and some invested I'm happy my parents always taught us the value of money and through out high school I've been saving so if my parents refuse I can afford to buy myself a house and live

of my savings for at least 5 years. I'm bought back from my thoughts by my dad.

Daddy: Entle and you? How do you feel about moving to a house that has no parents or going into a new environment?

I look at him for a while then I look at mom everyone is waiting for my answer they even quiet looking at me there's too many blue eyes in this room these people look like aliens honestly they are just weird.

Owami: Entle baby talk to us and stop making your funny faces.

Me: sorry ... uhm I didn't apply at the university here in Cape town so I don't think I'll be moving in the with everyone.

Now everyone is just waiting for me to say I'm joking.

Owami: please don't tell me you taking a gap year.

Me: no I'm not.

Daddy: so when your siblings are going to school what will you be doing?

Me: I'll be going to school just not in cape town.

My mother is now just looking at me even kuhle moved just so he can look at me properly. I know my mom is searching for something in my eyes I hope she finds it because I'm not going to change my mind about moving.

Sbusiso: dude can you just tell us what you talking about.

His frustrated well all my siblings look frustrated by me they normally like this whenever they try to get me to talk I don't communicate easily I normally just answer what is asked and if you don't ask me I don't say anything, so they get very impatient with me sometimes it does hurt my feelings when they get impatient because I try to communicate my emotions to them but I find it very difficult to do that so I just end up bottling things. My parents and kuhle and my grandfather are the ones who are patient with me they don't rush me or push me they just create a safe place for me to open up naturally to them. I sigh.

Me: I got accepted at a university in Johannesburg I'll be studying a degree in business science.

Their jaws drop I look at my mother and we stare at each other for a while when she finds her answer she just stands and walks out my dad follows her.

Siyanda: you are not going there Ntombentle and it's not up for discussion.

I raised my eyebrow this one thinks his our father sometimes. I just stand up and leave I go to the rooftop and lay there looking at the stars. After a while I feel Kuhle lay next to me I turn my head to look at him he does the same.

Kuhle: you leaving me.

Me: I'm not.

Kuhle: yes you are you know I'll be alone.

Me: I'll be just a phone call away and you can come visit me any time and I'll always come home to visit.

Kuhle: it's not the same and you know it.

I sigh I know what he means me and him are kind of the same and we understand each other no one understands us.

Me: I would never leave you I promise I just need to do this by myself and you know it.

We look at each other for a while for some reason we always communicate better through our eyes I assure him that I'm not leaving him. Finally I see his doubt disappear slowly.

Kuhle: why Johannesburg?

Me: honestly I don't know I just chose it.

Kuhle: ill call you everyday.

Me: you promise?

Kuhle: yes I promise and you must take care of yourself I hope you being away you find what you looking for so you can be fully happy.

Me: me too. I hope you make a friend when you get to varsity.

Kuhle: I highly doubt that will happen Khumalo kids are unable to make friends yall are weird as fuck.

I just chuckle because his right we can do anything but make friends. We then chill in silence I fell asleep on his chest and I woke up in bed in the morning around 4am I decided to go to the gym when I got there I found Owami fighting two robots Gosh my mother is goals hey I really aspire to be like her strength is amazing I sit there and look at her do her thing, when she was done she took a break I walked towards her and gave her some water she drank and she gave me gloves I put them on. I fought for a while as usual she beat the fuck out of me but I'm honestly better than before I just need more practice and clean up here and there then I'll be good as her.

Owami: you really leaving?

Me: yes.

Owami: but I don't understand why Entle wami why are you leaving us?

Me: ma I'm not leaving I'm just going to school in another province not a different continent, plus you will be able to visit me at anytime and I can come home whenever I feel home sick.

Owami: okay why do you want to stay in another province?

Me: Owami I need to find a piece of myself I have a void and I don't know how to fill it maybe a different environment will do it I don't know and besides that I want to be able to stand by myself.

I say this softly looking at her, her eyes get teary as she is looking at me I can see she just wants to fill in that void but doesn't know how she just wants to make me happy I love her so much.

Me: I love you ma I'm not leaving you or anyone please don't hold me back.

She just hugs me tightly my mom is being dramatic hey. A week past I did my registration online next week I'll be moving to Johannesburg I'm actually very excited my grandfather was not really happy about me moving but since he spends most of his

time there for business purposes he is kind of okay with it. Owami got me a two bedroom apartment in one of her properties and dad got me a black BMW and I'm happy with it because it won't bring too much attention to me the last thing I need is to be driving a very expensive car while I'm just a student that is just unnecessary attention. For some reason everyone has decided that it's best they accompany me honestly these aliens are going to bring me too much attention I don't need that.

We now flying to Johannesburg we using the private jet and these people are just loud I can't wait for them to go back I need my silence. We finally arrive and now my excitement is over the roof we get to my apartment well I didn't even decorate it but I'm happy with how Owami made it in my style I like it plus this complex has a gym so I'm good she even bought my bow and arrow. Remember I told you I like knives well I actually like anything sharp I'm very good at shooting arrows this hobby I pick up when I was with my grandfather he took me with him to some farm he

was there for business and I was there for the horse rides then I saw a small boy shooting arrows and he taught me so now its actually one of my favorite things to do and I'm good at it I need to look for a farm close by that will allow me to go for horse rides and bow arrow shooting. My parents decided to go to Soweto to my grandmother so I'm left with these aliens and they very noisy I'm sure my neighbors are complaining. We all slept in my two bedroom apartment we were squeezed and I felt happy to have them here I'm really going to miss being around them and their noise.

Eventually everyone left and today I went for my orientation and everything went well I got lost a few times and no I didn't make any friends people look at me weirdly I know its because of my eyes and it doesn't help that I also stare them when they staring at me. It's been a good few weeks and now we in the middle of February and honestly so far I'm loving the fresh air but I do miss my family I talk to kuhle everyday my dad calls me every morning even my grandfather. I'm part of the gymnastics team at the varsity and I'm happy I

joined a kick boxing class too I enjoy them very much even though the guys find me sexy at first but now they fear me since I kick ass mommy taught me well. I just left campus its around 7PM I was in the library finishing my assignment as I drive back to my apartment I decide to go to the garage to get some snacks its Thursday I do not have classes on Fridays so I'm stocking up for binge watching movies and series. I just parked my car I walk inside I'm currently looking at all these snacks I love snacks always have them. I take about 5packs of chips 2 big packs of sweets and 2 of popcorn I'm not a fan of chocolate I never buy it as I'm busy I hear gun shots outside and a car speeding off I get scared but I decide to go look when I walk out I see a man laying on the floor bleeding and his starting to choke on his blood I see the patrol attendants just standing there looking at him I run to the guy his been shot on his chest and upper abdomen I think its four bullets I try to stop the bleeding but it's not working I have both my legs on his sides I'm basically on top of him when I see that trying to apply pressure is not

working I stick my four fingers in his bullet holes then he slowly stops choking on his blood and the blood has stopped oozing out I look at him he looks dark skinned I see his hazel eyes look at me and he smiles I look at my hand and realize that I can not move it or he will die I reach for my phone in my pocket I call the ambulance and explain what is happening they tell me they will be here in 5 min I look back at this guy.

Me: hey you going to be okay just breath slowly and don't sleep keep your eyes on me okay.

I say softly eventually I hear the ambulance they finally figure out how to get us both in the car because I'm not allowed to move my hand I can see that the guy wants to sleep now they busy doing what ever on him and I'm still on top of him with my fingers inside of him. I tell them to drive to a private hospital but definitely not my dads he would kill me and ship me back to Cape town once he finds out I put myself in such a situation. As soon as the we get to the hospital they attend us we were moved to the surgery room and I was still

on top with my fingers inside him, they do their thing this is actually fascinating after a while I was told I can remove my fingers what a relief I was starting to experience some cramps from my muscles. I then later go home I'll come check on him tomorrow I took an uber to the garage and I drove home it was now around 4am I took a shower I was covered in blood I throw away I'm bloody clothes I fell asleep immediately. As I was sleeping I started to have a weird dream I saw my grandmother and my twin sister she looked exactly like me it's just her hair is longer and she looked so beautiful they were both dressed in white dresses she smiled at me I smiled back.

Her: my name is Nobuhle your twin sister. I need you to listen to me because you can not stay long here. Whenever you need me just call my name three times and I'll be there okay.

Me: I don't understand.

Her: Nthombenhle just call Nobuhle three times and I'll be there.

She then pushed me I felt like I was falling from a very high building by the time I was about to hit the floor I woke up fast sweating and shaking and breathing fast I look over the window and its already morning the sun is shining bright.

Me: Nobuhle Nobuhle Nobuhle

I said in a whisper holding my blankets for dear life, it suddenly got windy in my room then she appeared I got so scared and jumped back screaming I'm seeing ghosts this is not real.

Her: calm down I'm not here to hurt you Nthombenhle.

She said softly something about her is calming. Her aura is warm and nice I found myself relaxing we kept eye contact all this time she also has one blue eye and one black eye.

Me: you not real you dead I think I'm going crazy.

Her: you not crazy okay. Yes I am dead but my spirit is not, I found a way to reach out to you so I can communicate with you whenever. Our ancestors were not really happy about it but I

convinced them I can't take it when you busy feeling alone and lost it bothers me because I feel whatever you feel and whenever you like that I can not do my job properly as protecting you and our siblings. Nthombenhle you not alone you've never been alone I've always been here for you just couldn't see me. Unfortunately the void you feeling I can not fill but someone is going to fill it so do no worry about that with time you'll see things will fall into place so please stop feeling lost and alone you hurting me.

I was in tears already but I did feel better that she is here as for the void I guess I have to wait after that small conversation she disappeared I took a deep breath I checked the time it was around 11am. I woke up and took a shower I fixed my bed and decided to go to the hospital just to check up on that guy I don't even know his name but luckily some nurse remembered me so she showed me his room, the moment I walked my heart started to race and I started feeling some butterflies in my stomach okay this is weird he was sleeping peacefully without a shirt you can tell he hits the

gym because his actually very big maybe close to my dad's body. He is dark skinned it's very smooth and it's covered in tattoos I can't see them properly because he has a bandage across his chest his facial hair and hair looks well groomed he has a neat mohawk bushy eyebrows Gosh he looks so hot I'm staring at him and he starts to open his eyes I take a step back when his eyes are done scanning the room they land on me we stare at each other with no one saying anything I really don't know what to say he has small hazel eyes my stomach is really feeling weird right now I think I should leave I was about to walk out when the doctor walked in.

Doctor: finally you awake hey.

Me: hi I was just leaving.

Doctor : no wait I need to talk to you.

Hot guy: where am I?

Gosh his very deep voice just made my knees weak.

Doctor: at the hospital you were shot and when you fell I think you hit your head hard do you remembered what happened?

Hot guy: uhmmm... no I don't remember. Who am I?

Eh... me and the doctor looked at each other this is going to be a problem.

Doctor: looks like you experiencing temporary memory loss don't worry about it everything will come back slowly I'm just going to keep you for a night lucky the bullets did not do that much damage thanks to you Miss sticking your fingers in him other wise we would be talking a different story. I'm only keeping him here just to ensure that everything is okay when he gets home you will have dress his wounds I will have a nurse show you okay.

Wait what?? I do not know this man.

Me: doctor I do not know this man I just saw him laying there bleeding and I just helped.

The doctor looks at me then back at him I think it just registered that this man has no where to go. He sighs.

Doctor: then hospital bill? I can not keep him here forever we need the bed for other patients.

I sigh. God what have I got myself into?? I look at this guy and he just have has a blank face on. Looks like I'm going to hide this man in my apartment.

Me: okay fine I'll settle the bill and sign his discharge papers tomorrow is there anything else?

Him: you might have to bath him too for a week or two as he cant move his upper body that much then two weeks later he can come for a check up he should be okay by then.

Me: okay

The doctor checks on him and a nurse comes to show me how dress his wounds after when she went to bath him I just left and went to the mall I bought him everything he might need when he lives with me from clothes to toiletries I hope I

took the right size. This man has to get his memory back fast I cant hide him forever . When I'm done I buy us food and drive back. When I walk in he turns to look at me and smiles my stomach starts going that weird thing and my knees feel shaky. I put the food on the table and everything else I put in the cardboard. I take out the food I start to eat he is just looking at me.

Me: you not hungry?

Him: it hurts when I try to move my hands please feed me.

Me: okay.

I stand and sit on the bed facing him I take his food and start to feed him while I eat all this time his looking at me I think this guy is weird and I don't know what are these things I feel in my body every time I'm near him. Well today I just had him discharged we just arrived at my apartment and I his now chilling watching tv me and him don't talk and I'm good with that I go prepare his bedroom

when I'm done I go cook then dish up for him and myself in one plate I feed him while I eat when I'm done he takes his medicine and go sleep I just go to study. I go to sleep around 2am I wake up early I go check on him and his up already its around 8am.

Me: morning

He looks cute when he just woke up.

Him: morning.

Me: do you want to bath first or breakfast first?

Him: I think bath first.

Me; okay I'll be back.

I go back to my room I fix my bed I wear my spots bra and tights my body is out there my boobs are B cups my six pack is out to play these tights show all my ass and hips honestly I look hot lucky my hair is in a cornrows I'm going to give him a shower because its easier but there is no way I'm going to be naked with him in there. I walk back to his room and his sitting there shirtless Gosh this man is hot. He looks at me and his jaw drops he

swallows his spit I walk to him and stand in front on him between his legs I remove his bandages I keep getting goosebumps whenever my hand touches his skin and his breathing different.

Me: are you okay?

Him: uhmmm... yes yes... I'm I'm fine

His stuttering okay weird when I'm done removing them he follows me to the bathroom I open the water in the shower and wait for the right temperature I tell him to come in he walks in and he still has his underwear on but it looks bigger on his penis his very tall my head is just below his chest for fuck sakes his just huge and sexy and this water is just making everything extra I see all his muscles whenever he moves they move with him I wash his upper body when I'm done I look down.

Me: I think you have to take that off.

Him: uhmmm... okay

Me: can I take it off for you since you cant move much.

Him: okay

I remove his underwear and his dick jumps out looking hard with veins my eyes pop I look up at him shocked why is his dick this big okay I've never seen a dick before but this is does not look normal.

Him: I'm sorry I just cant control him.

Me: okay.

After I remove it I clean him up I go on my knees and wash his legs and feet when I'm done I tell him to turn around I was his firm bums I hear him chuckle when he turns around I was his penis I have to wash it too right? As im busy cleaning it up I hear him moan I look up to him and his eyes are small and red he looks down at me.

Him: I think that's enough washing for the day

His voice sounds deeper even though he said that whispering. I feel a tingle sensation in my viginia.

Me: okay .

When his we done I dry him up and we go to his room I lotion him I love touching his skin it's so smooth and dark it's like chocolate I want to lick it.

Gosh Lilly stop thinking like that. I bandage him as soon as I'm done I hear a knock I run to the window to see and it's my grandfather shit shit shit I run to his room I tell him to go to my room and stay there and be silent. I take off the spots bra and tights I even forgot his in my room I wrap the towel around me I turn and find him looking down okay good I walk out and open for Baba.

Me: morning Baba.

He walks in and kisses my forehead.

Him: morning princess how are you?

Me: I'm well thanks I just took a shower and how are you?

Him: I'm okay I'm actually glad you took your shower already I wanted you to accompany me to a meeting it's at this other farm close by I'm sure you might like to ride a horse.

Yes I want to go with him but I cant leave Mr. sexy alone I need to come up with an excuse a good one even.

Me: eish baba I would love to tag along but I cant I have to study and finish my assignment that's due on Wednesday can we go next Friday?

Him: that's no problem princess let me leave then or I'll be late I'll see you during the week okay.

Me: okay baba I love you

Him: I love you too

He stands I walk him to the door he kisses my forehead and leaves the moment I close the door I breath out I'm glad he didn't suspect anything but knowing him his probably waiting for me to come clean anyway I walk back to my bedroom I find him laying on my bed naked why didn't he put on a towel?

Me: his gone you can go get dressed

Him: okay

He leaves my room I go take a quick shower I settle for a baggy shirt and sweat pants I go to the kitchen I find him watching cartoons I make breakfast and dish up for us I go back to him and feed him while I eat after I give him his medication

the rest of the day we spend binge watching my series and eating junk I ordered in so I wont be cooking that's what I normally do on Sundays I chill and do absolutely nothing. For some reason he ended up falling asleep on my lap now I'm just staring at him I wonder what's his story why would someone want to kill him if only I knew his name then I would check him out on the internet or Instagram or Facebook or something. I cant even ask kuhle about this he would kill me I'm still staring at him he really looks pretty I touch his nose he moves a little and I stop I wonder if his lips are soft I've never been kissed all the guys either fear me or my brother so this is the closest I've been to a guy who is not family. I touch his lips gently they feel smooth I move to his beard on his chin and its soft. He opens his eyes and finds me looking at him I just carry on with what I'm doing I move my hand to his chicks I squeeze them a little they very soft like marshmallows or a baby's bum I keep analyzing his face he has a scar that cuts through the corner of his bushy eyebrows I put my

finger on it all this time his looking at me when I'm done I go back to look at the tv and eat my snacks.

Me: tomorrow I have to go to school I leave early and you probably will be sleeping so I'll bath you when I come back I will leave food for you in the fridge you will just have to warm it up but I'll come during my lunch break to check up on you. If you hear someone knock please don't open at all.

Him: okay.

The next day I wake up at 4am I go to they gym I come back take a shower make breakfast I check on him and his sleeping. I take my school bag and car keys and I leave as I lock the door the girl next door does the same I normally see her around she looks like a typical slay queen I have nothing against girls who have blessers I'm sure they have their own reasons that have nothing to do with me plus it's not my place to judge at the end of the day you an adult and fully capable of making your own choices. As I walk to the parking with her behind me.

Her: hey I'm Lerato I live next door

Me: hey I'm Lilly

Her: it's nice to finally meet you I've been meaning to speak to you but you look scary and very beautiful.

Me: it's okay I get that a lot and you also look beautiful.

Her: thank you let me go I have to catch a taxi.

Me: it's okay I can drop you off I'm sure we going to the same campus I think I saw you the other day.

Her: thank you so much you just saved me hey.

We drive to campus with her talking apparently she's doing her second year in marketing she's okay I guess I cant say much about her eventually when we get to campus she sees her friends and they start screaming at each other causing a scene I immediately leave her there I don't like drawing attention to myself. I go for my classes it's now lunch time and luckily my class after lunch is canceled so I just go back I find sexy marshmallow stretching in the middle of the lounge I just look at him.

Me: hi.

Him: hey how was school?

Me: it was just fine nothing interesting happened.
And did you manage by yourself this morning?

Him: yes I even took a shower by myself .

Me: uhmmm

Minus one problem I don't think I want to see his
big wee-wee again I go make myself a sandwich he
says he doesn't want one I sit in front of the tv and
start eating he keeps looking me and back at the tv
why is he being weird.

Him: you don't talk much do you?

Me: nope

Him: okay. Do you have friends I've never seen you
talk to them or about them but you always receive
calls at night or you have a boyfriend?

I look at him with my eyebrow raised.

Me: I don't have friends or a boyfriend I receive
calls from my family since they live far.

Him: where are you from

Me: Cape town

Him: okay

We go back to silence eventually later I study and cook and go to sleep that's normally my routine I really need to find a farm close by.

Amukelani Michael Hlangwane

My name is Amukelani Michael Hlangwane I'm currently stay with this girl she said her name is Lilly she's so beautiful but very intimidating I wonder why her eye have different colors, let's not even talk about her body every time I go to sleep I just get a wet dream when she took a shower with me I felt like dying. Every time her beautiful hands touched me I would get goosebumps she makes me feel foreign things I have never been scared of girls but this one is another thing even the way she looks at me it makes my heart race her eyes are really scary but something draws me to her I've never been comfortable with chilling with a girl even though she doesn't talk much but I enjoy her company. I actually remember everything I'm even shocked that she doesn't know me I'm

actually famous everyone knows me because of my business which is a Accounting firm called H Accounting and I own a lot of taxis here in Gauteng and Limpopo I got shot because some stupid man wants to take my routes by force when I refused he started a taxi war honestly I believe I'm fair I'm not greedy if he wanted to use my routes he should have asked nicely and we would've came up with a deal that will benefit both of us there are a lot of taxi guys who use my routes they just pay me a certain percentage and they happy with it because it's not even that much so I don't understand where is this idiot coming from. The reason I'm still here is because the moment I step out that door people will recognize me I'm sure some think I'm dead or something right I just want to heal fast so I can leave I don't want them to find me here they might hurt Lilly and it will be mu fault. A part of me wants to tell her what is going on but she just scares me. Let me quickly give you a description of myself. I am 26 years old and rich and very hot and handsome girls always throw themselves at me I have one daughter she is 3 years old with a girl

called Palesa she was just a fuck buddy next thing she was pregnant maybe she wanted to trap me I don't know but it didn't work I've never been in a relationship before but that might change because of Lilly I think I love her and how selfless she is. I'm the only son amongst 3 girls my father passed away when I was doing grade 11 he left all his businesses to my mother I'm Tsonga and I'm from Limpopo Giyani. Well my mother ran down all my dad's businesses and we got broke within 3 years luckily he left trust funds for all his children but my two older sisters blow it on useless things and dropped out of school now they both have 3 children each with different fathers my little sister is doing her grade 11 well my mother used her trust fund once she got broke so I pay her fees I don't mind because she is the only one at home who uses her brains as for my mother and sisters I send them money and support their kids because I know if I don't those kids will suffer. Today it's Friday she is here she said she doesn't have classes on Fridays I'm feeling much better now I honestly can't take my eyes off her she's concentrating on

her cartoons I actually find her very different there's something about her that I cant put my finger on.

Me: Lilly.

Her: uhmmm...

Me: I remember everything

She turns to look at me with those eyes, why is she so intimidating. I tell her the whole story hoping she doesn't see me differently from now on because I want to make her my woman as I'm telling her why I got shot and that I need to leave so I can go fix this mess she's just looking into my eyes without moving them I cant read her facial expression.

Her: okay.

Me: that's it? Just okay?

Her: did you expect me to say something else?

Me: I don't know I just didn't expect just 'okay'.

She shrugs her shoulders and goes back to the tv I honestly don't know what to think.

Me: do you see me different now that you know I'm in the taxi business?

She turns again to look at me.

Her: no

Then she goes back to her tv. One thing I've noticed about her is she doesn't easily open up.

Me: so if I asked you out on a date would you go out with me?

She looks at me again with her cute expression even her deep dimples are showing my god she's so beautiful I'm going to marry her.

Her: I don't know

Me: okay I'll ask you out when I'm done fixing this mess I don't want you to get hurt in the process .

One thing I've realized ever since I came here and spend time with Lilly I've found nothing but peace she has a way of calming my spirit I like it. She stands up and walk to her room and comes back with a comb I see her trying to upbraid herself well let me do that for her because I always did my sisters and mother I even know how to braid hair.

Me: let me help you with that.

She was hesitant at first then she gave it to me she set on the floor between my legs and I start taking off the hairpiece my god her hair is so soft and beautiful and long I think it's just over her shoulder blade. When we done we go to the bathroom to wash it she bands over the bathtub I take the shower handle and adjust the water temperature I start to wash her head while I massage it and she keeps moaning my god I feel like my dick is going to pop when I'm done I blow dry her my god her hair is so beautiful I neatly tie it into a bun I give her mirror and she smiles I think it's the second time I see her smile the first time it was when I thought I was dying.

Her: how did you learn how to do hair like that?

Me: I have 3 sisters and I'm the only guy.

Her: okay thank you.

Later we have dinner you know every time I see her eat she hardly uses her cutlery unless she has too she really has nice small hands her nails are

also done. As I was saying I think she hates eating with cutlery its actually cute. When we done eating I help her wash the dishes all this time we quiet when we done I decide to risk it all I hug her from behind I feel her freeze. I whisper in her ear.

Me: relax I will not hurt you I just want to say thank you for what you've done no one would have done what you did for a stranger not only did you save my life but you paid for my hospital Bill's and nursed me back to health and not once did you make me feel unwelcomed in your home.

She turns around and looks up at me I pick her up and she wraps her legs around me I put her on the counter and stand between her legs I keep my eyes on her I think that's how she communicates and right now I can see that she's trying to process what is happening.

Me: I think I'm in love with you.

She looks in my eyes for a while like she's searching for something.

Her: I don't know what to say.

Me: you don't have to say anything please let me make you happy that's all I ask.

Her: I've never had a boyfriend before.

Me: let me be your first I've also never had a girlfriend before

LILLY

I'm sitting here on the counter looking at this beautiful marshmallow asking me to be his girlfriend I do not even know how to girlfriend, what exactly do girlfriends do? I don't even know what to do with a boyfriend. This is just a lot hey.

Me: I don't know Amu.

Him: you don't have to give me an answer now.

Me: okay

I look down on his full lips I wish I knew how to kiss I would just smash my lips on him I was pulled back from my thoughts by someone calling me.

....ppppsssst entle entle

I look over his shoulder is we Nobuhle. For fuck sakes couldn't she choose a better time to appear I didn't even call her.

Nobuhle: kiss him

Me: what??

Amu looks behind him to see who am talking too I quickly turn his face and smash my lips on his okay now I don't know what to do I let him go and look down can this world open up so I can jump in.

Nobuhle: I'm sure he tastes nice uhmmm...

I look over again why is she still here I swear people are going to think I'm crazy talking to a ghost. Amu pulls my attention back to him by touching my chin he slowly moves forward and softly kisses me.

Me: I cant kiss

I say on his lips he chuckles and tell me to follow his lead he now has both his hands on my chicks, my hands are on his waist I feel him take in my bottom lip my head tilts on the side next thing I feel his tongue softly move in my mouth gosh this

is so nice I could do this the whole day if this is what girlfriends do then I'm sold. We both pull out to catch our breath he has his forehead on mine then he looks at me and smiles I'm just staring at his lips I think I found my new favorite snack I'm disturbed by someone again.

....psssst Entle Entle

I look behind him again its Nobuhle doesn't this one have a job to do for the ancestors like buy them bread or something.

Nobuhle: how was your first kiss?

She asks excited I feel like screaming at her but I can't because Amu will definitely think I'm crazy so I just ignore her. Eventually we go prepare for bed now I'm in my bed smiling touching my lips trying to remember his lips. I'm disturbed by Nobuhle.

Nobuhle: I say go to him and taste him again clearly you liked his lips.

Me: why do you appear in odd times what's wrong with you?

Nobuhle: I'm sorry I just wanted to see my twinie get her first kiss I'm never going to experience that so I wanted to see.

Me: Nobuhle you can not pop up when I'm with people especially when I'm kissing someone.

Nobuhle: stop being dramatic no one can see or hear me except you.

Me: exactly my point people are going to think I'm crazy talking to myself.

Nobuhle: we both know you don't care about what people say or think about you.

Me: can you just go away I want to sleep now.

Nobuhle: no tell me how he tastes first.

Me: no.

Nobuhle: please Entle pretty please I'll leave once you tell me.

Me: fine he tastes like marshmallows.

She screams dancing what kind of ancestor is this.

Me: can you leave now.

Nobuhle: okay goodnight baby I'll be watching you anyway his coming to sleep with you enjoy and don't do things I wouldn't do.

Me: what are you talking about.

I hear a knock on the door I look back at where she was standing and she's gone just great I go open and its Amu standing there with his chocolate self in boxers.

Him: can I please sleep with you I just want to hold you.

I look at him and his serious I've never slept with a boy before. What if I snore or fart I really like farting in my sleep imagine trying to hold in my fart because his sleeping with me.

Him: Lilly

He says waving his hand on my face.

Me: okay

I say as I move he walks in and gets into my blankets I switch off the lights and join him he pulls me closer and I climb on top of him his laying on his back he wraps his strong arms around me

my head is on his chest I can hear his heart beat I feel him kiss my forehead and whisper I love you I immediately fall asleep.

I wake up in the morning alone in bed I reach for my phone it's around 7 am I remember in slept on top of Amu. I see breakfast on my stand I sit up and reach for it there's also a note I open it and it reads' morning my angel I had to leave while you were sleeping because I don't like goodbyes I'll be gone for a while to fix some things as soon as I'm done I promise I'll come back for you please take care of yourself love Amukelani'. I sigh I hope he comes back soon. Today I'll b going out with my grandfather so I go take a shower and get dressed in high waist black Jean's and a white golf shirt I tuck it in and wear my white kicks I straighten my hair and let it lose. I hear a knock on the door I know it him so I grab my bag and phone and go open I see him standing there in his military boots, black military pants and a long sleeve white t shirt that shows off his muscles, I swear my grandfather doesn't look like his in his 60s he looks like his in his 40s even when his with my dad they look more

like brothers but honestly he really takes good care of himself he eats right, goes to the gym often we even go for facials together. I jump in his arms he spins me around while I giggle I miss him so much he puts me down and kisses my forehead we interrupted by Lerato from next door.

Lerato: hey friend

Eh... a whole friend?? I raise my eyebrow and look at her I honestly don't like this chick there's just something wrong with her so I just look at her, when she realizes I'm not going to greet her she greets Baba and he greets back I turn around and lock the door.

Me: Baba let's go we going to be late.

Him: okay

He takes my hand and we walk away. We jump in his mustang and he drives off.

Him: you really don't like her?

Me: no I don't.

He laughs and we rap along to the music we finally get to the farm he told me about I'm get excited I

meet the owner and we go horse racing Gosh riding a horse is so fun the adrenaline is amazing as always I come out first. Luckily the farm has bow and arrow shooting section so we go there well Baba is not really good at this so he normally let's me do my thing while he stands next to and ask me 21 questions his standing there with his arms folded on his chest as I'm aiming my arrow on the board.

Me: Baba

Him: Nthombi ka baba.

Me: have you ever been in love?

I shot my arrow and it hits the center I look up at him and his looking down at me with his eyebrow raised. I stare back at him waiting for his answer.

Him: where is that coming from?

Me: Baba please answer the question.

I take another arrow and aim again.

Him: yes I've been in love before and I'm still in love with the same woman.

Me: who is she?

Him: your grandmother.

I shoot again and turn to look at him.

Me: how did you know that you were in love with her?

Him: okay how about we go have lunch and continue this conversation because I'm hungry.

Me: okay me too let's go.

We drive out the farm and go to a nice restaurant its cozy and has this African feeling, we find a corner booth and settle there a waiter comes to attend us and we order. Our food finally arrives and we dig in.

Him: so tell me about this boy who has you asking me love questions.

I look at him.

Me: there is no boy.

Him: I know there is boy because if there wasn't then you wouldn't have asked me those questions,

just tell me I promise I will not look for him or spy on you.

Me: these is no boy Baba.

He sighs and looks at me for a while.

Him: Nthombi ka Baba you know I love you right?

I nod my head.

Him: that means your happiness is more important to me. Right now I'm not talking as your grandfather but as your best friend I would love if you could tell me about the new guy in your life so I can give you advice wherever you need it please don't tell me his name the grandfather in me will go dig up some dirt on him and make him disappear just tell me your story of how you met and how he makes you feel.

I look at him for a while and I can see his being sincere but I'm honestly scared to tell him because at the end of the day he is my grandfather before anything so talking boys with him it's a bit weird.

Me: okay there's its guy I meet...

I tell him everything from the day of the garage scene to this mornings note, by the time I'm done his still looking at me like something is wrong with me.

Him: you lived with a stranger for a week Nthombenhle?

Me: yes and I know that was me playing risky with my safety but I couldn't just leave him there when he lost his memory.

He sighs and looks at me again.

Him: okay I will let that slide for now if something like this happens again im getting you 30 body guards and we not negotiating. Now back to you loving him I don't know how to feel about that I feel like you growing up to fast for my liking but from the little you have told me shows that he does love you and speaking from a Male point of view when we say we will come back we do come back all we need is time and patience and like you said he is in the taxi industry and there is a war going on let him be a man and fix it so he can be with you openly but promise me to take things slow it looks

like his going to be your first everything so please take baby steps if you feel pressured or uncomfortable tell him and if he loves you enough he will understand and if he breaks your heart I will break his neck and everyone that is related to him.

I smile at him honestly my grandfather is my first love I don't know what I would do without him. We continue having our conversation over lunch then he takes me to a knives shop I'm so happy right now I see a tactical combat karambit neck knife I take it I put my thumb on the hole and start playing around with it well this would make a great weapon for fighting I know the blade goes over my fist when I hold it properly so it's easy to cut you by just giving you one punch and if I stab you with it, it will do more damage compared to a normal knife.

Me: Baba can I please have two of these

Him: alright.

He buys them for me and drives me back to my place I pack an over night bag I'm going to sleep

over at his penthouse I know we will be watching movies the whole night.

It's just after the June holidays and I'm flying back to Johannesburg my semester marks are great I enjoyed Cape town home was amazing even my siblings I missed them so much kuhle and I still ghost them to chill in silence Baba and I still go out on our dates my Instagram looks nice with the pictures of the restaurants we try I have around 30k followers plus I always post pictures of me and Baba in matching outfits for some reason we always dressed the same we don't even talk about it. I'm still waiting for Amu I miss him so much I even sleep with his clothes sometimes. I just got to my apartment and there is no groceries so I decide that I'll go tomorrow to buy I'm just tired right now so I order in.

Its Saturday morning I wake up and put my music on blast I start to clean my apartment as soon as I'm done I go into the shower I'm in such a good mood I'm even singing by the way I can sing just like my mom I'm the only one who took her

beautiful voice as soon as I'm done I wear my white lace underwear I love sexy underwear there is just something about it I look at my body on the mirror and demn I really look hot hey, I go to my closet and pull out my very tight strapless orange dress my whole body is out to play you can even see through the dress that I have a six pack take out my nude red bottom heels I kind of have thick legs so heels really look nice on me even my mother has told me countless times that I must not fear to show them off so today the world is about to see I pull my hair into a high beat bun I lay my edges I do a cat eyeliner and lip gloss I'm not a fan of make up or lipstick I just have a black eyeliner and mascara and all types of lip glosses I take a few pictures and post them on Instagram I take my wallet and car keys and go to the mall the moment I walk out it's all eyes on me even the girls are drooling at me honestly I feel like turning back I just remembered why I don't like showing off my body like this but since I'm here I just ignore the looks and go start with my grocery shopping I walk to the wine aisle and buy a few bottles and

move to my favorite the snack aisle as I'm busy putting in my snack a small baby girl comes running down laughing she bumps into me I think she is about 3 years I look down at her and she looks up at me she's beautiful caramel skin cute little afro tied into three buns she looks so much like Amu even her hazel eyes I think my mind is playing tricks on me, now this little girl is in a staring contest with me I really don't know what to say to her or what to do I find kids and babies very weird first they are very small like have you seen their tiny hands and why do babies have big eyes let me not get started on the fact that they don't have teeth at least this one has but she is just as awkward as the rest of them why is she even looking at me? As we busy looking at each other I hear his voice:

.....: Nyeleti how many times must I tell you to stop running around...

He stops talking when he finds me looking at him. Here stands the man I've been waiting for the past 4 months looking sexy as ever in his blue Jean's

and a black t-shirt we stare at each other for a while and we get interrupted by this lady she puts her hands on his chest.

Her: baby daddy let's go why are you standing here?

I still have my eyes on him and his still looking at me I feel some pain on my chest so I turn and carry on with my shopping my heart is really breaking he asked me to wait for him and his busy playing happy families with who ever the fuck that is. A huge part of me is angry as soon as I'm done I go pay and push my trolley to my car I find him leaning on my car with his arms folded on his chest his looking at me this whole time I just pass him and open my boot I put in my food and go into my driver seat I lock the doors immediately he tries to open my passenger door when he realizes that its locked he decides to stand right in front of my car I look at this stupid peanut head clearly he never got the memo about me I am my mother's daughter I put my car on reverse lucky there was no car behind me I stop and look back at him I

smile and put the gear into drive I press the accelerator hard my wheels spin and it jumps off I drive straight to him and he doesn't move I bump him and he rolls over my roof as I do a handbrake turn I look back on my review mirror I see him moving on the floor and security is running towards him I drive off and go home. The moment I close my door I breakdown and cry my heart hurts so much I end up passed out on the kitchen floor when I wake up I see Nobuhle sitting next to me looking sick.

Me: Nobuhle what's wrong? Are you sick?

Her: it's you Entle.

Me: me?? What did I do?

Her: your heart is hurting and that hurts me too.

I look at her I didn't know my heartbreak would affect her like this.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: it's okay now tell me why are you sad like this?

Me: its Amu I saw him with his girlfriend and child today

Her: did you talk to him?

Me: no.

Her: what did you do Entle?

Me: why do you assume I did something Nobuhle?

Her: because I know you.

Me: I didn't do anything.

She looks at me with the "really " look I just roll my eyes.

Me: okay maybe I ran him over with my car just a little.

Her: you did what??? Are you crazy?

Me: I said a little I didn't kill him.

Her: that is not the point Entle? Gosh you just like your mother hey. I honestly don't know what to do with you.

Me: mxm.

AMUKELANI

I'm laying here in the hospital bed with my broken ribs and a broken arm I never thought she would really run me over like that and that handbrake turn she learned that somewhere no ordinary driver can pull that off especially a female. My God I just fell in love with her even more when I saw her standing there with my daughter I saw my whole future I saw the mother of my kids and my wife and that dress she was wearing gave me a boner same time I couldn't even utter a word the way she was so beautiful it was like I was seeing her for the first time and the idiot Palesa had to ruin everything I send her home with one of my taxi guys she really annoyed me I'm sure my Angel thought I lied to her. I've been going to her apartment for the past two weeks and she's not been there I guess she just came back. She really ran me with her car I smile at that thought now I can't wait to get out of here and go see her I'm interrupted by my best friend Tshepo walking in.

Tshepo: and than wena? What happened.

Me: eish my wife ran me over with her car.

Tshepo: you mean your imaginary girlfriend?

That's another thing my friends think Lilly is my imaginary girlfriend because I don't know her full name so I could not look her up on social media to show them I never asked her full name she just said she is Lilly to me and me going to her apartment and not find her did not help, so all my friends think I'm crazy.

Me: I'm serious I saw her at the mall today.

I tell him the whole story and his busy laughing at me mxm. I can't wait for the day they meet her so that they can shut up. I spend a few days at the hospital I just got discharged so I go to my house I live alone in a double story house it's a four bedroom house it's big for one person but I like it only Nyeleti my baby girl comes here for sleep overs all the other girls I take them to hotels but since I meet Lilly I haven't been with anyone oh and palesa also knows where I live for obvious reasons. When I get home I go shower and get dressed my ribs feel better but my arm has a cast I call one of my taxi drivers to take me to her

apartment when I get there it's around 2PM on Thursday I know she's back from school I knock and wait I hear her feet first as soon as she opens she looks at me while sucking her lollipop she's in a baggy shirt and those weird animal shoes.

Me: hi

Her: hi

Me: can I come in?

She moves aside and I walk in the first thing I see is a lot of different knives on the table I don't know how to react to this so I just stand there looking lost she walks past me and goes to sit down she takes a cloth next to her and starts polishing her knives while sucking her lollipop she looks badass. I swallow hard I think I'm dying today. I walk and sit opposite her I clear my throat she's still not minding me she's just concentrating on her knives why does she even have so many knives I hope she is not a psycho.

Me: Lilly

She looks at me. I swallow again she's so scary plus these knives are not helping.

Me: I'm sorry about what happened at the mall. I should have told you that I have a daughter, she is 3 years old and that girl you also saw is her mother her name is Palesa we've never dated or anything like that we were just sex buddies then next thing she was pregnant ever since then all we do is co-parenting. I've been coming here in the past two weeks and you were not here please forgive me for hurting your feelings I did not forget you I told that I'll be back for you.

All this time she's been cleaning her knives not looking at me.

Me: Lilly

She stops what she is doing and looks at me for a while.

Her: are you hungry?

I smile I know I'm forgiven she's such a hard nut to crack hey

Me: yes.

She immediately stands up and go to the kitchen to dish up for me I miss her food she cooks really nice. She comes give me my food on a tray as she normally does and she goes back to her knives.

Me: thank you... why do you have so many knives?

Her: I like them.

Me: uhmmm okay.

This knife conversation we will have it another time. When she is done she puts them away neatly she cleans up and takes my plate then she goes to sit where she was sitting and looks at the tv.

Me: Lilly please come here.

She stands and comes to sit next to me I pull her to my chest with my one hand and she positions herself comfortably I have my hand around her small waist.

Me: I've missed you so much Angle.

Her: I've missed you too I thought you forgot about me.

She says softly.

Me: I would never forget the woman I fell in love with.

We cuddle until we both decide to go to sleep.

Me and Lilly have been spending time together for the past few weeks and one thing I've come to realize is that she is crazy when she is really ticked off and she is very smart and I learnt that she is claustrophobic I realized she never takes elevators or close the door when using the toilet and her apartment is very spacious even her bedroom she even keeps the window open even when she goes to sleep at first I thought it was just a habit and when I asked her she told me ever since then I'm always cautious about where we spend our time. I've been going to the rank to check on things and everything is good besides my friends teasing me about my imaginary girlfriend I do post her on Instagram but I hide her face I normally post her her cute hands and feet I love them so much. I was on an interview as the owner of H Accounting but I choose to be at the rank and let someone else run my company so they wanted to know why I don't

run my company and they asked me who is she because I never show her face or tag her well I don't even know her Instagram handle I have about 100k followers and I'm not private the last thing I need is these people invading her privacy and what I know is that my woman hates attention and I don't think she is aware of who I am. Once I show her off her world is going to change. Today she told me she is going to her gymnastics competition I didn't even know she is a gymnast but now I understand because her body shows she hits the gym often so I decided to take Nyeleti with me to go watch her and meet her officially. I just picked her up from Palesas home she lives in Soweto with her mom and siblings. As soon as I got her I drove to the location and it's full my baby girl is excited we got seats on the front the competition starts and demn this shit is so intense the flips they do is amazing even Nyeleti has her eyes glued on them next thing my girl come up she has those tights on she is walking barefoot she looks so beautiful Nyeleti starts to clap her hands excited she runs towards her and hugs her legs I think she

remembers her face I quickly go get her. The music starts she is one of those who dance from the ropes that hang in the air I don't know what they called but she is demn flexible hey my jaw is on the floor one thing I've noticed about the girls here is that they have small bodies with muscles but my woman has a fat ass and hips she looks nothing like a gymnast when they done she took number 1 for her varsity it was nice I even took a boomerang of her spinning in the air and posted her again. When we done we went to wait for her in the car eventually she comes and hops in the back she just greets us I can see she is a bit uncomfortable my Nyeleti on the other hand is busy asking me 21 question I find a restaurant that I know that its not crowded I step out and open the door for my two girls the moment we jump out Nyeleti holds Lilly's hand I smile at her as she's busy having a staring contest with her I hold her other hand and we walk in we look like a hot family I sswear.they show us the table I open the chair for both of them we order in I order a burger for Nyeleti she loves them Lilly orders the same I honestly don't know where all

the food she eats goes I think it all goes to her ass because she eats everything at first I thought she on some diet but nope I was lying to myself. When our food comes she immediately cuts Nyeletis burger into four sections so that she can eat it I'm just looking at her all this time we've never said a word to each other even my talkative Nyeleti is quiet and attached to my Lilly they keep eating from each other's plates it's cute to watch I quickly snap a picture of their hands on the plate and post it I see my phone ring immediately its Palesa I'm not taking it she knows I have Nyeleti for the weekend. Later we go to Lilly's apartment the two girls have been holding on to each other Nyeleti cries when she tries to leave so we decide to spend the weekend there lucky I had her overnight bag in my car and I have some of my clothes here I don't know when is Lilly going to come to my house because every time we try to go there something comes up. I've asked her to be my plus one to one of my friends wedding I'm one of the best men there and she agreed it's now time for these people to see my imaginary girlfriend. I

wake up on a Saturday morning and both my girls are not in bed I find them in the dinning table the both studying my Nyeleti is busy trying to write something on her paper she has different colors pens and a book the way she is holding that pen is just weird Lilly is busy typing something on her laptop I see they already had breakfast I just go to kiss her chick and move to Nyeleti who is murdering this book with her pens I kiss her too she looks at me and smiles I think Lilly's behavior is rubbing of her like she's really quiet but happy I don't know how explain it.

Today is the day of the wedding I told Lilly that I cant come pick her up as I'm one of the grooms man so I had to be there before everyone we all happy.

Tshepo: so your imaginary Lilly is coming today?

I turn to look at him and all my friends laugh mxm we will see who has the last laugh today. This wedding is actually a traditional modern wedding even our suits have that traditional print going on its actually beautiful I think this is how my

wedding with Lilly must be like. Eventually we get to the venue and people are already there I look for Lilly but I don't see her.

Tshepo: I don't think your imagination got the memo about Lilly coming here.

They all bust out laughing we standing at the alter waiting for the bridesmaids and the bride and stupid Palesa is one of the bridesmaids she wanted to be my partner I straight up refused I do not want anything to cause problems in my relationship plus Lilly had knives people will die here. Eventually the bridesmaid come and the bride everything goes well at the alter we go take pictures and we go to reception I decide to call Lilly because now I'm getting really worried she should be here by now.

Her: Snuggles

She says in her soft voice that's how she calls me.

Me: where are you? Are you okay?

Her: yeah I just pulled up in the parking there was an accident when I was driving here so it took longer for me to get here.

Me: okay I'm already at reception I'll see you now.

Her: okay bye.

I hang up and walk inside I take my seat and stupid Palesa is sitting on Lilly's chair.

Me: Palesa that seat is taken you need to move.

Tshepo: yes Palesa imaginary Lilly is coming move please

He says giggling and the guys laughing Palesa was about to say something and suddenly the guys are quiet looking at the door with their jaws on the floor I turn to look and there is my Lilly in her Zulu traditional attire, she has a short yellow skirt on it has beads her waist has beads and her shoulders, her leg has beads around her one knee and both her ankles have those white things she's wearing white Nike kicks she has a black bra that has beads even both her hands have beads her hair is straightened out she has nice beads on her head

that hang to her forehead she holding a short stick that has beads she looks so beautiful. Her eyes are search for me when they finally land on me she smiles and walks to me I stand up the moment she gets to me she wraps her hands around my neck and goes on her toes and pulls my head down to kiss her my one hand goes around her waist to pull her closer and the other on her ass she gives me a soft kiss and pulls out.

Her: hi

Me: hi

Her: I'm sorry I'm late.

Me: it's okay the accident must have been bad.

Her: yeah I think two people died and the rest went with an ambulance one was even stuck in the car the had to cut through it.

Me: I'm happy you here there are some people I want you to meet.

She looks at me with her beautiful scary eyes I know she hates people and meeting new people. I kiss her forehead and let her go I turn and they all

have their eyes on us I feel Lilly tense on my hand I look down on her and she is looking at everyone one by one she does that when she meets people it's like she is trying analyze them. I turn to look at Palesa.

Me: I told you that seat is taken and yet you still sitting here.

Her: but I got here first.

She looks at Lilly from her toes up to her face only to find Lilly looking at her with an eyebrow raised and intimidating eyes I see her swallow hard and slowly stand up and leave I open the chair for Lilly and she thanks me I sit next to her and all my friends are still staring at her.

LILLY

These people are busy looking at me and I'm also just looking at them I can tell that they are a bit shocked to see me.

Amu: Angle these are my friends Tshepo my best friend, Tebogo, Lindo, Karabo and Gontse. Guys this is Lilly the woman in my life .

Me: it's nice to meet you all.

They still looking at me like some alien okay they really weird. I turn to look at Amu he looks handsome with a suit on I've never seen him in one he actually never wears anything formal.

Me: I think there is something wrong with your friends.

Amu: No there is nothing wrong with them they just surprised that you actually exist.

I look at him waiting for him to explain.

Amu: they thought that you my imaginary girlfriend apparently I made you up.

I chuckle okay now it makes sense.

Amu: you want food we are about to go dish up or I can go dish up for you.

Me: no let's all go

We all stand there this Tebogo guy looking at me weirdly so I look at him until he decides to look away I hope we will not have problems. We walk up to the food as we busy dishing up I see Lerato

and Palesa across the room pointing at me and talking I didn't even know that they know each other anyway we go back to the table now the guys are talking and not being awkward like before.

Tshepo: please tell me Lilly is it true that you ran him with a car?

I turn to look at Amu his just looking at Tshepo in a bored expression I just giggle thinking about the day.

Me: yea I did.

Amu: you broke my ribs and arm.

Me: it was just a little scratch you fine now.

I say kissing his chick, next thing Lerato and Palesa are at our table I look at them.

Lerato: hey Lilly I tried greeting you the other day when you were with your boyfriend and I don't think you heard me.

She says all smiley with Palesa waiting for some drama to happen these two are very stupid even when they combined and this side Tebogo keeps looking at me and I'm slowly getting irritated and

now all the guys are quiet and Amu is looking at me waiting for some explanation I'll deal with him later.

Me: I heard you I chose to ignore you.

I see their smiles slowly vanish. I carry on eating my food this stew is really good I lick my fingers while closing my eyes and they all looking at me.

Lerato: oh...

Me: is that all you came to ask me? I'm really trying to enjoy my food and you disturbing me.

Lerato: I didn't know that you friends with Amukelani.

Me: his not my friend his my man.

My food is finished I start to eat Amu's food I see these two stupid smirk looking at each other.

Lerato; so the man with the white beard who drives a mustang is the blesser who pays for your rent and car?

Me: Lerato do you really think that you and I are in the same lane? Before you answer that take a good

look at me please don't rush yourself just slowly look at me carefully and then look at yourself then tell me if you really think we in the same lane.

She's now quiet looking everywhere but at me now I see why I never liked her. I'm just looking at her with my eyebrow raised.

Amu: can you two leave you irritating us plus that cheap perfume you have is giving me sinuses.

They look down embarrassed and walk away. I find Tebogo looking at me again. Let me deal with him quickly so I can eat my food in peace.

Me: Tebogo do you have a problem with me?

The guys look at me again.

Tebogo: I'm sorry it's just you look familiar.

I raise my eyebrow.

Tebogo: I'm really sorry I didn't mean to make you uncomfortable.

Tshepo: I'm sorry Lilly what is your full name? Your stupid boyfriend doesn't even know it.

I chuckle because I know he doesn't know my full name and we've been together for months now.

Me: Nthombenhle Lilly khumalo.

They all freeze Amu chokes on his food I just look at him I know their reaction means they know who are my parents.

Tebogo: I knew I know you from somewhere. I always heard that Terminator has a daughter who has one blue eye and one black eye I thought they were lying.

Amu: your father is Terminator and your mother is Blackeye and your grandfather is Godfather?

He asks with a bit of fear in his eyes. I think his going to see me differently from now on.

Me: yes

He just nods his head and goes back to his food now the whole table is silent and tense. They keep stealing glances at me. I do not know how to feel at this moment but I know I'm sad because I'm going to lose him because I'm a Khumalo baby and honestly there is nothing I can do about that I just

want to call my grandpa I want his hug. I stand and tell Amu I'll be back I walk to my car and drive away my eyes get glossy so I cant see the road properly I just pull over on the side. I take out my phone I see miss calls from Amu I ignore them and call my grandpa it rings as soon as he picks up I just sob over the phone.

Baba: Nthomi ka Baba I'm coming just stay right there and don't hang up.

I can hear his running I cry until I pass out I'm woken up by a knock on the window when I open my eyes I see Baba standing there looking worried I unlock the door he opens it immediately and pulls me out the car and hugs me tightly my tears start to come out again thinking about how I'm going to lose Amu just because my father is Terminator and my mother is black eye. He carries me to his car he has one of his guards driving so he sits in the back cuddling me I eventually fall asleep. Later I'm woken up by my father to come eat we are in his penthouse I go take a shower I have clothes here so its no problem I just wore my pjs I

look horrible my cheeks and nose are pink my eyes are swollen and red the color of my eyes look scary next thing I see Nobuhle next to me looking sick again I know it's my fault.

Me: I'm so sorry Nobuhle.

Her: it's okay everything is going to be fine.

She then disappeared. I walk out and go to the dining area I find all sorts of junk food I smile my grandpa comes from the kitchen with juice we settle down and just munch on everything he has not asked me what happened and I know at some point he has to know I just appreciate how his patient with me and not rush or push me to talk when I'm not ready. When we done he decides that we should go to the gun range, later he drives us to a gun range and we start shooting when we done we take a walk in silence holding hands.

Me: he found out who are my parents and you.

He stops and comes to stand in front of me look down at me my eyes get teary and I feel a lump on my throat. I say in a shaky voice.

Me: he looked at me differently I know his not going to want anything to do with me.

My tears are already flowing. He pulls me to his chest, why does seeing my future without him hurt so much? I was perfectly fine before him.

Me: Baba please tell me what I should do? You always know what to do.

Him: you need to breath first. I know you didn't even talk to him about it you probably saw his face and walked away you can not always run when you don't have the answer maybe he was just shocked. I suggest you keep a distance for now and when you ready go talk to him and find out if he really wants nothing to do with you or he was just shocked.

I know his right let me just give him space. We than go to my apartment and pack my books and laptop and all the things I'm going to need while I stay in his penthouse. I kind of hate staying in the penthouse because it's high therefore I have to use the elevator at least when his around I just close my eyes and he carries me to the elevator and keep

talking to me until we get up or I just take the stairs until I get to 20th floor. Being claustrophobic is really not nice especially when the panic attacks come whenever I'm in closed spaces or in crowded places but luckily I come from a fortunate family because they can afford to get me a place that is spacious and on the first floor, even at home I do not use the elevator I always take the stairs. I avoid going to the mall or any places on weekends because I know it's always crowded so I would go on Tuesdays or Wednesdays afternoon. Tomorrow I'm going back to school and I'm excited but now I have a lot of work to do, remember I said I do not want to take over Blackeye I want to start my own thing well in the past few months I have been working on that I started something just like Mel but mine is Sam Sam my mom doesn't know that I'm aware about how Mel works I've always liked being around her growing up and having a photographic memory is actually a blessing I remember everything and anything I put my eyes on or even hear hence I'm good in IT its because of my mom and every time I

asked her questions about something I didn't understand she was always happy to explain plus I took some online short classes for IT. Back to Samsam, I'm now known as Medusa what I do is I clean money for gangs honestly speaking when they clean their it's easy pick their mistakes especially if an auditor is send. My mother always taught me that there always spaces in the tech world whenever there is a shift in the universe it opens spaces that allow people like me do hide things there and you will never find them because it only opens for a few minutes or seconds so it's all about timing. So what I do is create accounts that look like they linked to whatever I want for example if a gang member asks for my services I look at the kind of gang lord he is and what they have normally I advice them in starting their businesses then I send them to ask for investors or go ask for a loan from a bank, the moment they give them the money the investors or bank would maybe give them 50k but I make it look like its 1 million or more the moment the auditor looks the money will trace back from the bank or investors

but from the bank side or investors its 50k. For some gangs since they already have businesses I just work on their finances in detail most mistakes they make is allocate too much money to departments which raises red flags all I do it seem like the company is making more shares with less expenses or ask them if they can have someone look like they are buying shares. The nice part about all of this is that no one knows me and no one can track me that allows me to choose the gang I feel like it has potential to grow and now I work for some gangs that are powerful ever since I started they all have been making more money then expected and I get paid well I just recently bought a bought a huge building with some man who is into property I'm just a silent partner we turning it into a student accommodation. I've heard my parents talk about Medusa and honestly I'm happy that I'm making a name for myself just like my mom did she is honestly an inspiration I look up to her. I miss Amu so much Baba told me that I need to stop running away whenever something is bothering me I must open up to him

and tell him how I feel he also said he will get tired of running after me I need to grow up because communication is important in any relationship and I really need to work on that for now I'm scared to even face him I cant take rejection. I've been going to school and back home for the past week all I do is work and study to avoid day dreaming about Amu.

AMUKELANI

It's now the month of October I have not seen Lilly or heard from since August at the wedding a lot has happened I'm even scared to go look for her I do stalk her on Instagram she does post pictures and statuses now and than I miss her so much but I know there's no chance for me and her again I ruined everything. What had happened after the wedding is that I summoned home by my uncles I hardly ever go home because I know my mom and sisters just want me to spend money on ridiculous things even though I support them already, plus my mom is very toxic she has a very sharp tongue she is quick to insult and say hurtful things

especially when you don't give her what she wants so I avoid being around her as much as possible but that doesn't mean I don't love her she is my mother after all. So when I got home actually all my family members where there even the once I have not seen in the longest time only to find out that the next day is my wedding day I tried to stop it and tell them I have someone in my life but they didn't care they told me that lobola has been paid already and my mother started with her insults so I just married the girl her name is Bongiwe and she now lives with me. She is your village submissive kind of wife so basically she is a house wife and we don't sleep on the same bedroom I do not want her all I do is avoid her she cooks, cleans, do my laundry and all those things I do eat her food though I'm not rude to her or anything like that she does try to talk to me and such but she is not my Lilly I even I had a nice baecation planned for us but that didn't happen because of this nonsense.

It's now the end of November and Bongi and I are trying out things but I still love Lilly deeply but trying never hurt anyone right. I'm busy switching

off the lights and locking up I'm going to bed Bongi now sleeps in my room and yes we did have sex I'm a man at the end of the day so I have needs and she was there so it happened. Nyeleti hates her so much that she hardly wants to come to my house now I have to bribe her all the time it's just frustrating I was about to go up when I received a message from Lilly that says she is outside I quickly go out there she is with her gown and sleepers on she's stand next to a cab when I open the gate the cab drives off she looks so beautiful all my feelings come back hard I hug her tightly I miss her so much I can smell that she has been drinking.

Me: how did you find where I live? Did you see the time?

Her: I looked you up so I can find you and apologize for how I walked out on you the other day.

I take her hand and walked into the house I take her to the guest bedroom and tell her to wait there I'm coming I go back to Bongi and tell her I need to take care of something she has no problem with

that so she goes to sleep and I immediately go to Lilly I find her laying on the bed with her very short pjs I get horny same time she sits up straight and looks at me I honestly don't know what to do she leans in to kiss me and I kiss her back before I know it clothes are flying out we both naked and I'm now looking at her I know she's a virgin and I always imagined breaking her but not like this.

Me: Lilly we can't do this.

She just kisses me I'm so horny maybe this can be a goodbye sex I start to brush my penis on her vagina lips they so soft I slowly push myself in but she's too tight I look at her.

Me: this is going to hurt are you sure you want to do it?

Her: yes I'm sure.

I look at her for a while I love her so much I start to push again I she screams and I shut her up with a kiss im finally in and she's really tight and warm I'm not going to last I start to move slowly trying to not hurt her my god she is so nice we continue

making love until we both come she falls asleep in my arms I look at her and she is the most beautiful person I've ever seen. I slowly get out of bed and go to the kitchen I'm wearing my boxers I want water when I get there I find Bongi snacking on something I honestly think she might be pregnant. I get the water and drink while looking at her.

Her: I thought you left.

Me: no I was in the study making calls.

She walks up to me and wraps her hands around my neck I look at her she was about to say something when Lilly came down wearing my t shirt walking barefoot my God she looks perfect. She looks at me with teary eyes I quickly let Bongi go I walk towards her and she walks back so I stop all this time no one has said anything we haven't taken our eyes off each other I see all the hurt I've caused her I feel a lump on my throat I know there is no come back from this. I say in a shaky voice.

Me: she is my wife I'm so sorry Lilly.

Her tears immediately fall she just walks out the front door without saying a word. My tears also fall I've lost the love of my life let me just let her cool down then I'll take her to her apartment later. Bonggi tried talking to me I snapped at her and she went to sleep now I'm just sitting on the floor in the kitchen it's been a while so I decide to go look for her so I can take her home, when I get outside I don't find her I look for her but she is not here I run upstairs to call her but her phone is here shit shit shit I decide to go drive around and look her but I still don't find her when I get home its already morning and I found Bonggi burning her things I slapped her so hard and left her there crying.

MAX

My name is Maxwell but everyone calls me Max let me tell you what happened last night I was at one of my clubs it was around 2am I decided to go out for some fresh air I stopped smoking about a year ago and ever since I'm always snacking on something to stop the cravings I don't get the cravings like before but now I just love snacks so I

was in my office I just took a pack of chips and walked out as I was standing outside eating my snack looking at these drunk people down the road I see a girl walking alone with just a shirt on you these girls don't like dressing up and now she's here alone in a very dangerous street as I'm looking at her I see 4 hobos go to her when they get to her they start pushing her around now I have to help her before she gets raped I pull out my gun and slowly walk down before I know it she is throwing a punch at one of them next thing she is fighting these guys and she's good so I stop and look at her I cant see her face probably because of her hair and it's dark here I see one of the guys pull out a knife but suddenly it's in her arms she stabs all of them now they all laying on the floor bleeding and groaning I'm really impressed I've never seen a girl fight like this it's like she is a professional she then jumps their bodies and keeps walking she is walking towards my direction so I just wait for her. She was about to pass me.

Me: hi.

She turns to look at me she's short very short her hair is kind of covering her face so I can not see her properly she is covered in blood.

Me: let's get you cleaned up you don't look good.

She looks at herself and back at me we stand there for a while with her looking at me eventually she nods her head. I try to take her hand but she pulls away shaking her head okay this is going to be a problem .

Me: okay I will not touch you just follow me and stay close.

She nods her head I walk to the bouncer and tell him I'm leaving when we done I go to my range rover I love big cars all this time she is following me I open the door for her when she climbs in I see she is not wearing any underwear and she has blood between her thighs I hope she was not raped I close the door and go to my side I hop in and look at her she's just looking out the window with tears on her face for some reason her tears break my heart and I don't know why I feel this way because

I've seen a lot of women cry and I just don't care but right now I want her to stop crying.

Me: please stop crying.

I say coldly I carry on driving and I get to my complex I park and open the door for her she jumps out and I walk away she follows me I live in some nice very expensive flats I live in a bachelor's pad when I get to the lift I press and wait for it she is standing next to me.

Her: can we please take the stairs

Her voice is sweet and a bit scratchy maybe because she's been crying, but it made my heart skip a beat it's even racing.

Me: I live on 18th floor so no.

Her: okay I'll find you there.

She turns and walks away I see her look around when she finds what she's looking for she walks to the fire escape stairs and goes up the stairs this girl is fucking crazy why would she go up a flight of stairs when there is an elevator it finally opens but I don't go in fuck this shit since when do I care

about bitches I don't even know why she's here I walk in the elevator and press 18 it finally opens and I stand at my door waiting for her why do I feel bad? After a while I see her coming down the corridor she comes and stands next to me my heart starts to race again I just open the door and we walk in I live in a one bedroom bachelor's pad so it has one bed she walks past me looking around I show her the bathroom so she can take a shower. I go make something to eat I'm hungry so bacon and cheese sandwiches will be fine I can hear the shower is on so I go to my bedroom and when I pass the bathroom the door is open even the shower door and it's making a mess on the floor there is water everywhere now I'm really annoyed pull out my boxers and a shirt I'm busy looking for an extra blanket and pillow but I cant find it as I'm busy I hear her behind me.

Her: do you have a mop I can use to clean the floor.

I turn around and freeze I feel hot very hot and sweaty and heart is racing too fast I put my hand on my chest I'm just staring at her. She has my

white towel around her body it's short its tight around her hips I didn't notice she has such a goddess body her hair is wet and tied up into a bun I can clearly see her face even though her eyes are swollen and her nose and cheeks are pink I think it's from the crying she's so beautiful her pouted pink lips they look juicy I never seen such a beautiful person she looks unreal even her eyes are scary they look bloodshot red. She snaps her fingers in my face pulling me back to reality I blink a couple of times and clear my throat.

Her: the mop

Me: oh...uhm let me go get it you can wear those clothes I put on the bed.

I go get my lotion and body spray I give it to her and quickly walk out I don't think I can stay in there with her for too long I breath out the moment I get to the kitchen I drink a glass of water and go take the mop I find her in my room dressed up she even found my shoes she's looks cute in my clothes everything just looks big but my boxers

look tight on her big ass and hips I feel my dick jerk.

Me: when you done come eat.

She nods her head and walks out. I breath out I didn't even realize I've been holding my breath I go to the kitchen and sit on the high chair I start to eat while I go through my phone she comes and sits next to me she smells just like me. She takes her food and starts eating she looks cute chewing she is just staring into space I see a tear drop I feel like someone is pinching my heart I slowly wipe it with my thumb she looks at me in my eyes she looks broken and hurt I think her eyes are two different colors or maybe I'm seeing things I stand up and pull her into my arms she just sobs painful I carry her to my bedroom I lay her gently on the bed but her grip around my neck is so tight I cant breath.

Me: I can't breath loosen up your grip.

Her: please don't leave.

Me: I'm not going anywhere I just want to take off my clothes and get into bed with you.

She hesitated at first and she let me go I took off my pants and shirt I'm left with my boxers I pull the blankets we both get in she I'm comes on top of me she lays her head on my chest I wrap my arms around her small waist I can tell she hits the gym her body feels a bit hard. Having her like this feels right and peaceful something I've never known all my life. I think I need to get her morning after pills when I saw the blood between her thighs I knew what that meant she was probably raped and I also noticed her walk it's like she's in pain that person had better pray I don't find him I'm going to make them wish they never crossed paths with her. Why do I suddenly feel protective of her you know what I don't care I just want to see her smile. I don't know this feeling I have its foreign I never feel anything for women all I do is fuck them and leave but here I am with a woman in my arms and all I want is to protect her and make her smile I hate seeing her cry and broken like this she doesn't look like a weak person I

eventually fall asleep. I wake up in the morning and she's still asleep I slowly get out of bed and go to the pharmacy quickly I get her the pill and buy us breakfast I'm very bad at cooking I only know how to make eggs and sandwiches I go back I find her still sleeping I carefully look at her lips are slightly open and pouted her cheeks look pink and cute, why does she make me feel like this I decide to let her sleep because we slept around 5am I put her food and pills on a tray with a glass of juice I cover it and put it on the side table I leave her a note that I'll be back. I change into gym clothes and head out when I get to the gym I work on the punching bag I feel so frustrated right now she is making me do things that I never thought I'll do for anyone I don't even know her name my friend Mbongeni we call him Bongs brings me back to reality when he holds the punching bag.

Bongs: what's wrong Max?

Me: I don't know

He sighs he knows very well that I won't say anything and I honestly don't know what to say

because I don't know all these feelings I'm feeling about her right now. When I'm done I go take on the weights as soon as I'm done I go back home when I arrive I find that she cleaned up and she's just standing by the balcony by the lounge it has a joburg view its beautiful I stand at the sliding door and look at her she has my sweatpants on with my t shirt everything looks big on her, her hair is in a lazy bun she turns around I think she felt my presence she looks at me for a while her eyes are different colors that means I was seeing right last night we stand there for a good 5 minutes just looking at each other .

Me: hi

Her: hi

Me: how you feeling?

She just shrugs her shoulder.

Her: can I please borrow your phone?

Me: okay.

I pull it out of my pocket and give it to her.

Me: I'm going to take a shower

She nods while she's busy pressing my phone I go take a shower and when I'm done I walk back and go warm up the food I bought as I sit down to eat and I hear her talking on the phone.

Her: please daddy I promise I'll be back for Christmas the contract ends on the 20th I didn't think its going to be a problem I'm sorry okay okay okay bye daddy love you too kiss Owami for me.

Then she hangs up she walks in to give me my phone and sits opposite me she looks at me while I eat I think she is weird who does this I just continue looking at her eating. I think she is analyzing me no one looks at me for this long most people find my face scary and I don't blame them but here is a beautiful woman looking at me like she is studying my face I don't know how to feel right now.

Her: thank you for helping me last night and everything.

Me: it's no problem. Do you want to tell me what happened because you didn't really look good.

She sighs and for the first time she looks down then she looks at me again.

Her: my boyfriend I mean my ex boyfriend is married and he only told me after he broke my virginity. I was coming from his house last night.

She said in a shaky voice I felt like going to him and just make him meet his ancestors.

Her: uhmhhh... I need to get back to my place thank you for letting me stay here for the night.

Me: stop thanking me can I take you to your place

Her: yeah sure.

When I was done we both walked out she said she is taking the stairs I just followed her I cant believe I'm doing this to myself we finally make it down we get in the car she opens the window like she did last night she puts in her location in my phone I know this place it's very expensive when I get there I walk her to her flat luckily it's just on first floor she offers me a drink but I need to get to work so I kindly decline I tell her that I'll come check on

her later I don't even know why I said that after I leave.

LILLY

The first thing I did when I got to my apartment is burn everything that belongs to him I really want nothing to do with him my heart is just broken and I'm done crying for him I did enough of that last night so all I did was bury myself into my underworld work. I told my dad that I got a job this side so I'll be home around the 20th I know if I go home now my mom will definitely see I'm not okay so I need time to gather myself I didn't tell my grandfather about Amu because I know he will make him disappear and his gone on his missions so I don't know when I'm going to see him so no I don't want his blood on my hands I just hope he is happy what I don't understand is why didn't he just tell me before having sex with me yes it would have still hurt my feelings but I know it would've never made me feel cheap and used but its okay as I'm laying on my bed thinking Nobuhle appears. I

just look at her why didn't she warn me about Amu it's like she could read my mind.

Her: its because you had to go through what you going through now in order to get to your destination. You had to meet him so he can lead you to your soul mate Amukelani was never yours to have baby.

She says softly for some reason I feel better maybe she is right but who is this soulmate she is talking about.

Her: do not worry he will reveal himself but right now your broken heart is blinding you once it's fixed you will see him.

She then disappears. Honestly I'm really grateful for that guy I even forgot to ask his name if it was not for him I would have been stolen or something bad would've happened his place is really nice I like his style it had a nice wooden feeling to it which makes it homely the view from his lounge is to die for. Truth is that guy looks scary he is the exact same size as my dad and grandfather so his huge his muscles show that he hits the gym

regularly his whole body is covered in tattoos he has short hair and a full beard its not bushy more like Drake he is dark skinned he has a big scary scar that goes through his left eye from his forehead to his eye till his chick his eye is even grey in color I don't think he can see with it his other eye is black for some reason I just couldn't take my eyes off him, honest truth his very handsome in a scary way you can not see his sexiness because of the dark aura he carries and that huge scar but I kind of like it I feel like without it he would look regular I like the fact that he doesn't hide it I know if it was someone else they would put a eye patch to hide it. He really looks beautiful I fall asleep thinking about him, I'm woken up by a knock on the door I go open and find him standing there with a bag of food my stomach immediately grumbles I take the brown paper bag and tell him to come in I walk to the kitchen and start dishing up for us his just standing there looking at my every move. When I'm done we settle on the dinner table he sits on the head I settle right next to him we eat in silence

when we done I quickly wash the dishes as soon as I'm done I take a lot of snacks we sit in front of the tv.

Me: what do you want to watch?

Him: I don't know I hardly ever watch tv.

Me: okay

I decide we watch Tom and Jerry he takes one packet of chips and he opens it he then turns to look at me.

Me: what?

I ask shrugging my shoulders.

Him: are we really watching this?

Me: yes what's wrong with it?

Him: how old are you again?

Me: you don't ask a woman that.

Him: you making me watch Tom and jerry are you serious?

Me: do you not see my serious face?

Him: couldn't you just choose something else.

Me: no scar face

After I said that I immediately put my hand over my mouth he looks at me with his eye brow raised then he busts out laughing I just look at him he stops laughing and looks at me then he laughs again I'm just looking at him for a scary person he really has a beautiful laugh. I just smile shaking my head and watch tv.

Him: you do know that you a weirdo?

Me: no I'm not.

Him: yes you are.

Me: why would you even say that?

Him: have you seen yourself? Why do you even have two different colors on your eyes?

Me: I don't know I was born like that.

Him: and you still think you not weird?

Me: mxm

He laughs again I just smile and watch tv.

Him: let's go out tomorrow.

Me: go out where?

Him: I don't know what have you always wanted to do?

Me: uhmmm... I want to try bungee jumping

I say in excitement.

Him: we can do that and some court biking since it's in the same area.

Me: yes please let's go.

He smiles at me and says okay he will pick me up around 11am

MAX

Its now 11am and I'm knocking on her door she finally opens and my jaw drops she is wearing torn shorts with a long sleeve over the shoulder white shirt its tucked in her beautiful thick legs are out to play and her body structure is out on display her hair is curled it's so pretty she has a small bag and her phone she looks up at me and smiles. I honestly want her to change her clothes but I know no man will come near her when I'm with

her she steps out locks the door and hooks her hand on mine.

Her: shall we Mr. Scar face?

I look down at her and smile she's really beautiful we walk to my car I open the door for her she jumps in and we drive out when we arrive there we immediately go for the bungee jumping she is so excited she looks like a kid they hook her up first when it was time for her to jump she just stood there looking down I asked the guy to hook me up so I can jump with her I walk up to her and hold her hand she looks up to me I can feel her hand shaking.

Me: you ready.

She nods her head.

Me: use your words.

Her: yea I'm ready.

She looks back down I start to count down we both jump off I don't know how but she was clinging on me for dear life with her legs around my waist and her arms around my neck I also hug her and hold

on tight and now we just swinging in the air as we being pulled back up. Holding her like this feels amazing I don't want to let her go eventually we done with that and went court biking and she showed me flames, you know every time I know how to read people and what they about their weaknesses and strengths but when it comes to her I'm just confused as fuck and its frustrating and scary I swear if my enemies saw how weak and scared this girl makes me I would be dead by now anyway later we driving to her apartment she is tired and quiet I like how we can stay in silence and its always comfortable sometimes we just look at each other and we already know what the other is thinking. Mostly I love how she just let's things fall into place naturally she never asks stupid questions like all these girls she just enjoys being in the moment. We finally arrive at her place I'm walking her up when we get to her door it's not locked we both look at each other I know what she's thinking she slowly opens the door we walk in I'm in front the moment I walk in the man in the lounge turns around when he sees me he

immediately pulls out his gun at me and its mother fucking Terminator I just look at him Lilly jumps in front of me fast I pull her back is she crazy.

Terminator: you have the fucking nerve to show your ugly face at my daughters house Max

I smirk at him I didn't know that his my father in law. Lilly moves in front of me again I just put my hands in my pocket looking at him.

Lilly: daddy please put the gun down.

Terminator: wena Nthombenhle go get your bags we going home now!.

Lilly: okay I'll go just please don't shoot him.

Her voice his shaking I hate it when she cries I just want to hold her why is he making her cry? Let me leave fast before I forget that he is her father I walk towards the door I turn to look at her just to make sure she's okay she looks at me with her teary eyes I turn back and walk out she knows I'll call her later I walk to my car and drive home when I get there I find my friend bong's in the kitchen I just sit there I roughly run my hands through my head I

want to call her so bad but I know his dad is probably breathing down her neck, how did I miss that she is his daughter well I do have a history with Terminator we do not like each other I think its because you can never put two bulls in a kraal its amazing that we haven't killed each other till this day yes his a few years older than me I think he just hates me because I don't bow to him like everyone else yes he runs most of Africa but I run most of the drug businesses yes I'm a drugloard more like king pin and his more of a contractor so he assassinates a lot of people and runs governments without even them noticing. He did try to take over the drug business and I straight up told him that we will go to war and honestly that war was going to get most innocent people killed because both of us have strong armies and we both ruthless so he made a wise choice and let me be and since then we stay out of each others space, well until now if he thinks I'm going to stay away from my Lilly then he has another thing coming because I'm gong to be his son in law.

Bongs: what's up boy ? You've been scarce and now you look depressed.

Me: eish... its nothing I cant handle

He looks at me I just stand up and go take a cold shower I need to cool down when I'm done I chill on my bed I'm going through my work phone I just started working with this Medusa person and I must say the results look promising I normally do my own accounting and clean my money but I have too much on my plate so now I'm working with him or her and everything looks good when I'm done I take my personal phone and I find pictures and videos Lilly took with my phone because hers died they look cute and funny I'm just smiling looking at them until I'm disturbed by incoming call it's my mother she's so annoying my mom is one of those rich housewives I've never seen her work a day in her life all she does is spend my dad's money and she's a snob she has tried multiple times to hook me up with her friends daughters they all stupid some I've fucked before they not my type they just like my mom but she did hook my

older brother with one who I have fucked and they now married but it's none of my business. The problem with my brother is his always trying to compete with me and trying to prove that his the better son and I'm not even there my dad has groomed us to take over his businesses when we older business comes naturally to me hence I'm this successful and my brother hated that so he became yes daddy no daddy person. When I refused to take over his businesses because I wanted to start my own he disowned me I was doing matrix at that time so I ended up in the streets and got into the drug business now I own a couple of hotels, clubs and restaurants. When I came back home I had already got into the accident where I got the grey eye everyone feared me now even my dad but he hides it as for my two younger sisters they both like my mother all they do is spend money on useless things they don't want to go to school. All in all I avoid going home because I don't want to deal with them I do not have the patience I miss my grand parents they are

my dad's parents they were amazing people and they understood me. I answer the phone.

Me: hello

Her: Maxwell why are you taking so long to answer the phone?

Me: I was busy how can I help you?

Her: when are coming home it's the Christmas holidays now.

Me: I don't know I'm very busy.

Her: you always busy you never come home...

She keeps talking and talking Gosh she's so annoying I agree to come sooner I'm not even excited.

LILLY

when I saw my dad pull out his gun I swear I peed my pants he was so angry I know he probably has some history with Max I also didn't know that his a king pin I'm sure that's why my dad hates him. I'm just taken back on how he handled himself most men can not stand up to the mighty

Terminator and how he just stood there and look at him I was kind of turned on but I honestly don't know why I jumped in front of the gun like that I think I've grown really fond of him plus I enjoyed my outing with him it was amazing and how I was able to trust him just took me by surprise I do not trust easily but he gave me a sense of safety it's like he touched me without using his hands ,its amazing how he can say so much without even uttering a single word and how he listens when I talk to him without speaking out loud. We just landed in Cape town and the flight was awkward I'm just happy we going home I'm sure Owam is going to fuck me up she once punched my sister Nolwazi when she was in high school and they sneaked out for a house party when she tried to talk to them Nolwazi got disrespectful and earned herself a blue eye ever since then I never step on her toes and now I know my dad is going to tell her I'm dead. We finally arrive home he hasn't said a word to me I took the stairs and he took the elevator the moment I walked through the kitchen I saw Owami and throw myself in her arms I just

sobbed I miss her so much as soon as I calmed she looked at me for a while and pulled me with my hand to her office we settled down and she gave me some hot chocolate we drank while talking about general thing I really missed my mommy.

Owami: talk to mommy Entle I know something is heavy on your heart and I hate seeing you like this.

I sighed first I was scared to tell her I broke my virginity but for some reason I found myself telling her about everything from how I met Amu to my now friendship with Max and how dad wanted to kill him when I got to that part she was laughing so bad I don't even know what's funny.

Owami: so you like this Max person?

Me: his cool.

She looks at me for a while I really don't know what she's looking for.

Owami: are you in love with Max?

I just look at her clearly she didn't hear me when I said my heart has been broken how can I be in love so quickly.

Me: Ma his just a friend.

Owami: that's not what I asked you.

I go quiet again I honestly don't know what to say I really don't know how I feel when it comes to Max he makes me feel weird yes I do get butterflies whenever he touches me and my heart warms up and gets excited when he laughs he has a beautiful smile and his laugh is contagious he hardly ever laughs but when he does man it does things to me I just want to see him happy at all times. I look back at my beautiful mother and I don't have an answer for her. She raises her eyebrow and sips on her hot chocolate with a smirk I was about to say something when my dad walks in I look at him trying to read his face but his blank he sits next to my mom and kisses her they sitting opposite me and Owami is busy giggling they so cute together I hope one day I have their kind of marriage its beautiful.

Owami: ha.a Khumalo stop it my baby is in the room.

Daddy: did your baby tell you that she's now dating so this view is not foreign to her.

Owami: yes she told me how you tried to kill your son in law.

She says giggling my dad frowns looking at her.

Daddy: Max is never going to be my son in law. I'm never going to have a son in law all my girls are going to grow old with me here in this house.

Owami busts out laughing I giggle trying to hide my laugh pela I'm still in trouble so I can't be laughing too much.

Owami: do you want to bet that Max will be your son in law?

Daddy: Owami keep talking like that and I will kill him.

Owami: you not going to kill him Khumalo and I'm serious if anything happens to him you will not like my reaction.

He looks at her for a while I know she means business.

Daddy: mxm

He stands and leaves the room my mom turns to look at me again and we talk more with her busy grilling me with her 21 questions about max I don't even know where she gets this thing that he is her son in law. Later we go to sleep I go sleep with Kuhle I miss him he also tried talking to about boys I just ignored him. It's now morning I go to my room the moment I switch on my phone Max phone call comes in we talk for a while. Later I decide to check on my Medusa work but I forgot my laptop charger so I walk to my mom's office to borrow hers since we use the same laptop when I get to the door I hear them talking because the door is slightly open I was about to knock until I heard that she's talking about Medusa so I just stood there to listen.

Owami: I'm serious Khumalo this Medusa person is a female like the name is a given no man would call themselves Medusa and she really reminds me of myself when I was still in the shadows as Blackeye. I've tried so many times to track and

locate her but I always hit a break wall whenever I think I'm close my laptop catches a virus and crashes it's like she is using my work I really want to meet her.

Daddy: well I'm just looking at her make a name for herself and she's really moving up and fast I even heard the Italians and the English men want her. I really admire her work I've looked at a few gangs accounts and you honestly can not find anything that leads to money laundering it's just so clean you would swear these people are really running legitimate businesses.

Owami: I know she's really smart on how she moves their money she even turned Diamond into a real business man imagine a whole Diamond who doesn't even know how to wear a suit he now sits in board meetings with tracksuits and flops chewing bubblegum.

They both laugh I smile I know if I was able to impress them that means I'm doing a good job they really are a big deal in the underworld. I knock on the door and walk in pretending I didn't hear

anything. I just walked out and I heard my mom talk again.

Owami: Oh...before I forget there is a man by the name of Amukelani Michael Hlangwane I want to clear his accounts I want him broke and when that happens I want us to buy Accounting company for Entle.

Daddy: why? I don't even know anyone with that name.

Owami: let's just say he messed with my baby and he has to pay for it.

Daddy: what did he do to my baby ?

Owami: nothing you should worry yourself about and no you can not kill him it's too easy I want him to suffer and let me deal with him.

Well I'm happy that mom will deal with him he really broke my heart as for his company I'm not sure if I want it. I go do my work I asked Sam Sam to keep an eye on Max and whoever does business with him and I noticed that his been trying to seal a deal with the Portuguese and it looks like they

want to trap him let's hope he doesn't fall for the trap at least nothing has been signed yet meaning they going to have a meeting soon.

Today I'm going shopping with my sisters I miss our outings and their bubbly personalities they so loud unlike me but I would never trade them for anything. We all dressed up and daddy has send us money as we walk out I see the drawer where they put car keys I smirk and take out 3 keys from daddy's sports cars I giggle and run down to the garage when I get there I find them sitting in the SUV waiting for me I stand by the window I dangle the keys with excitement they look at each other and back at me with smiles they jump out immediately I throw the keys to them

Nolwazi: you see why I love you so much.

She says excited kissing my chicks.

Ulwazi: you do know that daddy is going to kill us right.

Nolwazi rolls her eyes.

Nolwazi: then we die happy.

She runs quickly to the car. I just shrug my shoulders looking at Ulwazi I go to the other car the moment we get out the gate we race to the mall we take the long route just for the sake of it this is so fun I love the adrenaline that comes with fast cars we get to the parking and Ulwazi was first she's really good when it comes to cars and racing so she always wins I park next to her and Nolwazi parks next to me we step out happy and giggling I look at my phone and I see miss calls from dad I know he wants to shout at us I just put my phone back we walk in the mall and we go from shop to shop we now in this lingerie shop we love good looking underwear so we on the same aisle choosing between different designs.

Ulwazi: I have this one so I don't want it but I think you should try it I like the fabric it feels nice on the skin.

Me: okay this is not my type of lingerie you know I'm more of strings and ropes but for the sake of the fabric I'll take it.

Ulwazi: I swear you wont regret it.

...:ladies

A voice says behind me I feel my heart drop to my stomach I slowly turn around the moment I see his face I jump in his arms he spins me around I giggle. He finally puts me down.

Me: Max what are you doing in Cape town.

Him: I came to see you.

Me: oh.. okay it's a nice surprise.

Nolwazi starts fake coughing next to me I look at her why is she so dramatic. I wait for her finish Ulwazi is busy giggling she finally stops coughing and looks at me.

Me: are you done?

Nolwazi: yes Nthombi ka Baba.

She grins at me I just shake my head and look back at Max find his eyes staring at me.

Me: Max these are my two sisters Nolwazi and Ulwazi. Girls this is my friend Max.

Ulwazi: you have a friend?

She asks with a frown they both looking at me weirdly I look back at them.

Nolwazi: how did you even make a friend? Zee I think we should move to jozi we might just make friends.

Ulwazi nods her head in agreement. What is wrong with these two.

Max: can I take you out for lunch.

Nolwazi: yes please I'm famished.

She says and hooks her hand on his he smirks at her.

Ulwazi: can we finish first here? I don't want to come back to this shop.

Nolwazi: yea plus Max we need advice okay.

Can someone kill me please. Max looks like his about to shit himself I just giggle. We walk from aisle to aisle choosing what we want when we get to the cashier he pays for them and Nolwazi is still stuck on him like a glue he keeps looking at me with begging eyes hoping I'll save him I'm not doing shit I enjoy seeing him suffer it's cute. We

eventually get to a restaurant we settle down and the waiter takes our orders.

Nolwazi: so tell us Max are you single or you not sure where you stand with Entle.

He chocks on his drink I look at Nolwazi I swear this girl is just forward. I will not even entertain this conversation Max looks at me I just sip on my drink the food arrives I dig in immediately.

Him: uhmmm... (he clears his throat) I'm single for now.

Nolwazi: well I know you love Entle if you want some advice or pointers call me I'll help you I know she's very difficult and everything but I like you so you have my blessing.

Him: uhmmm... okay thank you

Ulwazi: Nono please stop harassing the poor guy he cant even have a conversation with Entle the person he came to see because you breathing down his neck.

Nolwazi: you know very well that she will not say a word look at her she can't even hear us because

she is in her own world I'm sure poor Max doesn't even know what to say to her.

I just carry on eating I can feel Max is looking at me because his sitting across me and whenever he stares at me it makes my blood rush just like now.

Ulwazi: Nono eat your food and shut up.

Nolwazi: mxm.

The table goes silent finally I look up at him and he has this worried face looking at me I just stare at him and continue eating I missed his face I wonder what happened to his face I miss hearing his laugh I smile as I picture him laughing at my stupid jokes. He smiles back at me I'm sure he thinks I was offended by Nolwazi but she doesn't hurt my feelings anymore I'm over her thinking that something is wrong with me. When we done eating he walks us to the parking Nolwazi and Ulwazi are walking in front of us we are few feet away from them walking in silence I missed his presence it makes me feel warm I know whenever I'm around him everything just makes sense I feel him hold my hand I look at it and up at him we

finally get to my car we stand there for a moment looking at each other.

Him: Lilly.

Me: Max

Him: how are you?

Me: I'm okay and how are you?

Him: now that I've seen you I'm much better.

Me: you do know that you didn't even have to come all the way to see me I'm coming back next month.

Him: I couldn't wait for that long I had to see you.

He says that softly I look at him and his eyes look sincere and warm my stomach feels some tingling. He moves closer and my heart's starts to race. I whisper.

Me: I have to go.

Him: okay.

He takes my car keys and opens my door for me he kisses my forehead and I hop in he closes the door and leans over.

Him: I'll make a plan to see you before I go back okay.

Me: okay.

I start the car and drive home I find Nolwazi and Ulwazi waiting for me we walk in with our bags and find daddy waiting with his hands on his waist ready to kill us, where is Owami before her husband kills us.

Daddy: who gave you permission to use my cars?

We go silent Nolwazi and Ulwazi look down. Me and him are staring at each other my dad is really scary.

Daddy: Nthombenhle I'm talking.

Me: No one gave us permission to use your cars.

Daddy: so why did you take them.

Me: we just wanted to experience driving a sports car.

He looks at me for a while.

Daddy: Nthombenhle you three were speeding with my cars do you have a death wish.

Me: Daddy you and Owami taught us how to drive we even did advance driving I don't think a car will kill us.

Daddy: so you talk back now?

Ehh...I just look at him the elevator opens behind him and I see Baba walking in I drop my bags and run fast into his arms he spins me around while I laugh out loud. When he puts me down he goes to greet Nolwazi and Ulwazi then my dad.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba how have you been?

Daddy: she's been dating Max that's how she's been... oh and now she steals cars.

Ahh... this man is spicy. Baba is looking at me with his eyebrow raised I just shrug my shoulders and go take my bags and go to my room. I pack my new clothes when I'm done I go up to the roof top I just sit there looking at the sun set lost in my thoughts I get interrupted by a phone call and its Max I smile and answer.

Me: hello

Him: hey did you get home safe?

Me: yes and you?

Him: yeah I'm at the hotel though.

Me: oh...okay

We both quiet I can hear him breathing I just look at the sunset and listen to him breath, eventually I go to my room because my phone is low but I'm not hanging up so I need to put it in the charger.

Him: why are you fiddling around?

Me: I'm charging my phone its low

Him: okay are you going to bed now?

Me: yes

I say as undress and get in the blankets. I put my phone on the pillow lucky the socket is just next to my bed so we good. I lay on my back looking at the ceiling I can hear him fiddling I think his also getting into bed next thing its quiet again I just hear his breathing eventually I fall asleep. I wake up to someone talking I realize it's coming from my phone its Max talking why didn't he hang up his not even talking to me so I let him be and go to the bathroom with my phone I brush my teeth and

wash my face I go to my room and wear my pjs fix my bed.

Max: Good morning Lilly

Me: Good morning Max.

Him: you snore very loud and fart a lot.

Me: how do you know shouldn't you be sleeping at night.

Him: I was until your snoring got in the way of that.

Me: I don't even snore.

Him: yes you do.

Me: I'm not going to argue with you.

Him: uhm... okay I'm going to send you a address to meet up with me.

Me: okay. I have to go now

Him: okay.

We both hang up. I go downstairs and we have breakfast my cousins are round everyone is just loud I receive text from Max I take one of the cars and leave I'm sure they didn't even notice I'm out

I drive to the location it looks like a farm house I love it already I always picture myself living in like a country house where I can ride my horses and shoot arrows. I drive in I see him standing on the porch he looks sexy with his tight t shirt on he comes and opens the door for me why does he look so big I always feel very tiny whenever I'm next to him. I step out he pulls me into a hug I'm swinging in the air with my arms around his neck he smells nice eventually we walk in the house I love everything about it it has this country feeling it's just nice we walk into the lounge and he has this indoor picnic/cinema setting for two on the floor its beautiful there is this big window you can see outside it's just grass and trees the weather is even cloudy everything is just perfect for this setting we settle down and start eating while watching a horror movie and cuddling after the second movie it's now raining quietly we decided to listen to music, his laying on his back and I have my head on his chest and his arm is warped around me tightly I can hear his heartbeat and its beating really fast I think I make him nervous. Phora- Make

You Feel starts playing softly I feel him move a little he takes his free hand and holds my chin I look up at him he moves his face closer I think his going to kiss me my heart rate increases and blood rushes I think I'm going to have a runny stomach, before I know it he smashes his lips on mine just stays like that suddenly everything I was feeling cools down I feel at peace and content I slowly open my mouth and take his thick soft bottom lip into my teeth I gently bite him he starts to kiss me back his really a good kisser I find myself on top of him and his hands on my thighs as I'm wearing a dress he slowly takes it off he then flips us over now his on top of me he pulls out the kiss and looks at my body thoroughly I had this white lingerie it has strings holding the lace together its really sexy it's one of my favorite he looks back at me with a smirk and biting his lips he takes off his shirt my god he has so many tattoos which make his dark skin look even more beautiful he comes up at me and starts to kiss me I feel him tear my lingerie roughly couldn't he just take it off nicely I will deal with him later for now he his busy nibbling on my

neck and it's so nice he moves down to my boobs he sucks one and he gently squeezes the other one this sends goosebumps all over my body I moan out again he goes on until he has his face buried in my thighs I don't know how to feel about this but his tongue is doing the most I keep jerking up and down he even put his hands on my waist to keep me from moving up and down, suddenly I feel something building up in my body I just want to release it I try to move up again but his grip is strong the feeling is close I push his head deeper and start to release some liquid it feels so nice I'm even shaking with tears coming out. When I open my eyes I find him grinning looking at me I just feel embarrassed that I just peed all over these cushions my eyes move down his body and his naked I don't know when and how that happened but my eyes are stuck on this huge dick that has veins popping and pre cum dripping its really big and scary I don't think it can fit in any vagina maybe he drank something I don't think its healthy to have such a big dick I know you think I'm exaggerating but its really big too big. I'm

brought back by him coming on top of me I swallow hard looking at him I want him so bad my clit is even twitching but I really think he will not fit in.

Him: relax I will not hurt you or do anything that you don't want.

Me: okay.

He looks into my eyes for a while I can feel him poking my vagina this is pure torture I just want to feel him inside me already.

Him: you do know if we go through with this there is no turning back, if I make love to you right now it means you are my woman and no one is allowed to enter here or touch you like I do because if that happens I will kill you both and bury you where no one will find you.

I swallow hard he said that softly but knowing that his a king pin and his ruthless I know he means every word and I don't care because deep down I know I love this man and I would do anything for him even though I'm not ready to admit it.

Him: Lilly are you sure you want to do this.

Me: yes I'm sure.

He looks at me for a while the Phora song is still playing it's on repeat. He kisses me again but now the kiss is different it's full of so much emotions I find myself pulling him closer to my skin eventually he pulls out the kiss to catch our breath he starts to rub his dick on my vagina while looking at me.

Him: I might hurt you if you feel any pain just tell me to stop and I will okay.

Me: okay.

His voice is much deeper and his eyes look small and beautiful this man his beautiful guys even with his grey scary eye his just perfect. I feel him trying to push in but his too big he tries again I think on his third try he finally goes in slowly I feel my walls trying to accommodate his size but its painful my tears start to come out he stops immediately looking at me with worry I swear I think I'm breaking my virginity again.

Me: please don't stop.

Him: but you crying Lilly I'm hurting you.

Me: please Max the pain will subside if it doesn't then I'll ask you to stop.

He looks at me and starts moving again I kiss him to distract myself from the pain he kisses me back and plays with my boobs while he moves in slowly it's still painful as ever but I still want him to continue finally his in. He starts to move his waist gently the pain feels a bit nice I moan softly in his ear.

Me: move faster please.

He moves his head from my neck and looks at me he starts to move a bit faster the pain and pleasure just takes me places he places his forehead on mine as he groans in pleasure which turns me on even more I open my legs wider for him I don't think I would be able to do that if it was not for my gymnastics he moves in deeper and groans I scream as the pain shoots up he stops and moves his waist again slowly I start to feel the pleasure

again then the build up as he moves faster I lose myself again as I bite his shoulder and dig my nails on his back my body starts to shake I release everything I think I peed again he then pulls out and flips me over now I'm on my knees with my ass up as he made me arch my back I feel him push in again he groans loudly with his hands tightly on my ass he starts to move in and out slowly the pain and pleasure is amazing but there is more pain than pleasure in this position but I let him enjoy himself because the pain is bearable he starts to move faster his hands move tightly to my waistline now its really painful I try to pull out but his grip is strong and his being rough I'm starting to struggle to breath with every thrust I scream in pain I don't think he can hear me because his groaning in pleasure and lost in his world I grab his hand from behind and scream stop I think that worked because he pulled out immediately and turned me to pull me to his chest I'm a crying mess my vagina is on fire I'm even bleeding he keeps whispering that his sorry I think he broke my

vagina I just keep crying silently because its really painful.

MAX

Fuck fuck fuck I knew this is going to happen I didn't mean to hurt her I know my dick is really big every time I have sex I always leave the girls in pain but with them its different because I really fuck them with no care at all and now I tried to be gentle with her but she's just too tight and so soft and warm I lost myself in her it was never my intentions to hurt her and now her tears are just making my chest painful I want her to stop crying as I'm holding her I feel wet on my thighs I try to move her and I see blood now I'm really worried.

Me: Lilly may I please look down on you, you bleeding.

She just nods her head she tries to move I see her flinch in pain I hate seeing her hurt especially if it's my fault I just want to fix it. She opens her legs and there is just too much blood coming out I think I should just take her to the hospital Gosh Terminator is going to kill me. I run upstairs and

come back dressed I take the towel and wipe her I try to be gentle but the blood is still coming out I dress her in my t shirt and wrap her in another towel I carry her to the car I place her and I can see she's really in pain she even looks pale I step on it when I get to the hospital I carry her inside the nurse takes her the towel she had on is covered in blood. I sit on the bench and bury my head in my arms my chest is in pain I really don't know what to do I hate that I hurt her, her phone rings in my pocket the caller ID is Owami I just look at it I don't know who is this. So I just sit there and wait for the doctor to come tell me that she will be okay I'm sure from now on she wants nothing to do with me I don't know what I would do if she said she doesn't want me anymore. I sit there for a few hours eventually the doctor comes I stand quickly he comes to me.

Doctor: you the one who brought in the young lady?

Me: yes how is she?

Doctor: are you her family perhaps? I can only talk to her family.

I change my face and look at this doctor carefully I can see he is trying to push my buttons and I'm not in the mood I just want to know that my Lilly is okay. I pull out my gun and point it at him I honestly don't care who is watching he immediately puts his hands up and takes a step back.

Me: I don't have all day so start talking.

Doctor: uh.... Uhm... ..itit It looks like she was... was ..was sexually assaulted her virginal walls were teared up lucky it's not permanent damage we were able to repair them surgically in order to stop the bleeding or she was going to bleed to death. I have called the police as per hospital protocol so both you and her will have to give statements.

I just agree to whatever he says I don't want to explain what happened to her I put back my gun all I want is to see my woman and that's it. They direct me to her ward I finally get to her room she

is sleeping peacefully I brush her hair softly and kiss her forehead her phone rings again it's the Owami person who has been calling I finally decide to pick up.

Me: hello

Owami: hello may I speak to the owner of the phone?

Me: uhm... she cant come to the phone at the moment.

Owami: okay Max it's her mother speaking I've been trying to get a hold of her I know she's at the hospital now tell me why is she there before all hell breaks loose.

Shit I rub my head frustrated.

Me: can you please come to the hospital alone and please don't tell Terminator.

She goes quiet for a while. I really hope she agrees I rather deal with a concern mother then an angry father plus my head is not in a great space right now the last thing I need is to explain why she's here to Terminator he will really kill me.

Owami: okay I'm coming.

Me: thank you.

I hear her moan I quickly hang up and go to her she opens her eyes and looks at me with a weak smile.

Me: hi

Her: hi can I have water?

I take the water beside her and help her drink. I look at her I'm just waiting for her to ask me to leave.

Her: I'm sorry.

She says looking down playing with her fingers.

Me: no you did nothing wrong I'm the one who is sorry I shouldn't have taken it that far the doctor called the police its okay if you want to open a case I'm so sorry I hurt you it was never my intentions.

Her: no no no there is no need for the police I gave you my consent everything that happened I agreed on it it's just that your thing is really big.

She says the last part softly. I smile at her.

Me: I'm sorry for that I wish there was something I could do to make it smaller.

She giggles that warms my heart. The door busts open and Blackeye walks in this woman is beautiful she actually kind of looks like my Lilly. She walks straight to Lilly and puts both her hands on her face.

Her: are you okay baby? Did he hurt you? What happened? Why would you leave the house and not tell anyone Nthombenhle? What is wrong with you?

Lilly: Ma please stop I'm fine he didn't hurt me.

Her: then why are you here?

She goes quiet and looks at me I look back at her I don't know what to say her mother also looks at me.

Me: I think I should go get you something to eat.

As I was about to walk out the doctor walks in with the police.

Doctor: great I found you both here now you can give the police the statements.

He looks very uncomfortable I think I really scared him earlier, Lilly and I look at each other and she looks back at her mother who is trying to figure out what is happening.

Me: uhmmm.. doctor that will not be necessary.

1 police: sir sexual assault is a very serious thing and I can promise you that we will catch the culprit.

Lilly's mother: sexual assault??

She asks looking at Lilly and me.

Lilly: doctor I was not assaulted so there is no need to open a case.

2 police: Mam you do not have to protect the person who did this to you we can help you.

Lilly: like I said before I was not assaulted.

She says now annoyed honestly I also find them annoying her mother has been looking at me through out this conversation I look back at her I know she is trying to search if I really assaulted her but I know I didn't yes I did hurt her but not intentionally and I stopped the moment I realized

that I was hurting her so I look at her and wait for her to find her answer eventually she does and looks at the doctor the two police officers walk out.

Lilly's mother: doctor please tell me what happened to my daughter.

Doctor: when the... the (clears throat) gentlemen brought her in she was bleeding from her vagina only to find that her vaginal walls have been teared just like someone who has been sexually violated.

She looks back at Lilly who is looking down embarrassed I know she is scared to admit that she was having sex to her mother so I guess I'll have to try and tell her in a simple and polite way.

Me: I did that to her...

Lilly: no he didn't it was me

She jumps in interrupting me I look at her and she looks at me with her begging eyes okay now I don't know what to do.

Lilly's mother: can someone please tell me what happened! Nthombenhle talk before I call your father.

Lilly looks at her with her eyes popped.

Me: we had sex and my dick is too big.

Lilly: Max man!!

I just look at her and back at the doctor and her mother who looks ready to kill me.

Doctor: I don't understand she...

I interrupt him.

Me: there is nothing to understand we had sex and my dick is too big I stopped the moment I realized that I was hurting her.

Lilly: he did not force me I gave him my consent and his right he did stop when I asked him because it was too painful.

Doctor: uhmm.. okay I will keep you here for the night just make sure you do not get any infection for the next 6 weeks you can not be sexually active until you healed fully.

Lilly: okay thank you.

He walks out and the mother keeps looking at me and her making those funny faces that Lilly normally makes Gosh they so alike. I go get them food I also buy a few snacks and go back to the hospital as I was about to walk in I hear them talking about me.

Lilly mother: Lilly tell me here how big is his penis for him to hurt you like this?

Lilly: Owami please I'm not having this conversation with you.

Lilly's mother: oh... maybe I should call your father so you can tell him.

Lilly: okay fine... his really huge Ma I think he broke my virginity again.

Her mother laughs. I think I like their relationship and how open she is with her I was worried that she doesn't have friends to talk too and I noticed that she's not as close with her sisters to talk to them like she does with her mother.

Lilly's mother: why didn't you ask him to be gentle?

Lilly: he was very gentle and slow even when he noticed I was crying he tried to stop but I asked him to continue it was beautiful Ma I would not mind to do it again even though it was really painful... I'm in love with him Ma

She says in a teary voice I know that voice it breaks my heart whenever I hear it but right now it just made my heart skip a beat I never thought that there would be a woman who would fall in love with me my face is scary with this scar my life is dangerous because of the job I do and now there is a woman who is in love with me?? Me?? Not any woman but a woman who does not even need me because she comes from money so I can not say its because I'm rich. I'm in love with her too I would do anything for her I would give her this world even if she asked me.

Lilly's mother: I know baby I've always known I was just waiting for you to admit it.

Lilly: yeah I know but I'm worried about daddy he really hates him.

Lilly's mother: no he doesn't hate him they just the same but don't worry about that I got you just enjoy your love life but promise me that you will not get pregnant please just finish school first and make your own money. If you get pregnant I will let your father kill him.

Lilly giggles I just smile I know she has school and she is very young to be a mother so I will not get her pregnant anytime soon. I walk in they both look at me her mother kisses her and leaves us I'm grateful that she came alone so there is less drama. I stay with her until she falls asleep I go back to the farm house to shower and change my clothes then I go back to the hospital I get into bed with her I pull her close she turns and kisses me I deepen the kiss and my dick jerks I pull out the kiss and look at her I move her hair from her face.

Me: you beautiful.

She turns red immediately I chuckle I think this is the first time I see her blush.

Her: thank you.

Me: why are you not sleeping.

Her: I thought you left me.

Me: I just went to take a shower and change clothes. How are you feeling now?

Her: I'm not in pain I think it's the pain medication they've been giving me is working.

Me: I'm really sorry Lilly. I didn't mean to hurt you.

Her: please stop apologizing I gave you permission to go all the way and you stop the moment you realized I was hurting.

Me: but I still hurt you and you know how much I hate seeing you in pain or crying.

Her: can we please move on from this Max I know you didn't purposely hurt me.

Me: okay fine we should sleep now.

Her: okay.

She snuggles on my chest I feel tingling things in my stomach I hold her close and fall asleep I woken up by her nurse as she has to clean her up

and give her medicine she brings her food and I feed her mother comes to take her home I'm going back to Johannesburg later I have some business to deal with since I'm done this side.

I'm currently in joburg I'm at the warehouse with my gang members we trying to make sure this deal with the Portuguese goes through Bongs is my right hand man and his the one who actually thinks this can work as for me I have a bad feeling about it and in this business its important to trust your instinct I really don't want to go into business with them they are power hungry and we've bumped heads before because they want to have access to sell their drugs in my territory and I don't want them here because they will start doing things that will attract attention from the law and I've been doing well in all these countries without any problems from the police or anything like that plus they have a huge human trafficking business which I know that they will want to mix it in my territory and I don't want that I don't hurt woman and children like that. At this moment the reason why I'm letting this go on is because I trust Bongs

he will be the one to handle most of the businesses with them and he knows what we stand for I know he would never allow them to start stepping on our toes the money is really good and having Medusa by our side with the books I might just go international but I still don't want to do business with the Portuguese but Bongs and the gang members voted me out sometimes they forget that I have the last say here but I will let them be for now.

It's been three months Lilly is back we've been doing well and I'm happy we haven't had sex since what happened in Cape town and every time I see her I just want to bend her over or pin her on the wall I swear this girl put something in her pussy it's just too nice man I cant get that day out of my head before I obviously hurt her, her natural juices just make it slippery in a tight kind of way its just so nice. Anyway one of this good days I will have my way with her hopefully I don't loose myself again and hurt her I think that's what stopping me from just having her again. Right now I have a meeting in one of my clubs with the Portuguese we

actually sealing the deal but something doesn't feel right I know Bongs and my gang members will be there I know it would be stupid of them to try and take us on in my territory. When I'm done I grab my keys and go I get to the club and tonight it's actually gentlemen night so it's packed with rich men and slay queens I go up to the VIP I see everyone is here I settle next to Bongs and they're drinking and smoking cigars the girls leave our table and we start to talk business Bongs is doing all the talking I'm just sitting back wondering what exactly do these people want one guy pulls out the papers which need to be signed by me I just look at them when suddenly Joe chokes on his drink with his eyes popped I look at him and they're all looking at the door I turn my head my jaw drops immediately she walks slowly looking at me she's wearing a white dress that has a high slit with red sandal heels she has a short blond wig on with a maroon lipstick her hips look bigger and her waist looks so small if it was up to me I would have her over this table with her thong on the side I feel my dick jerk fuck what is Lilly even doing here I hate

how every men turn their heads and look at her with lust she finally arrives at my table and sits on my lap and kisses me I feel her tongue moves in slowly in my mouth I move my hand under her slit I feel a strap on her other thigh I move my hand around it and I feel something sharp I think she has two knives. She pulls out the kiss and kisses my chick and goes to my ear all this time my eyes are closed because I'm trying to figure out why is my woman on my lap with knives on her thigh. When she gets to my ear she whispers.

Her: do not sign its a trap.

She then nibbles on my ear and pulls back to looks at me I look at her she has hazel eye contacts I miss her eyes but at this moment I just want to understand how she knows this but I will deal with that later I look into her eyes as she's busy wiping her lipstick on my lips I know she's not lying but I really don't want her here this meeting can turn sour real quick I turn my attention back to the Portuguese they have their eyes on my Lilly I clear my throat they look at me. I still have Lilly on my

lap and I'm honestly horny as fuck her sexy entrance really has me imagining me doing things to her. I look at these stupid fuckers.

Me: I'm not going to sign anything this deal is not going to happen not now not ever.

Bongs and my gang look at me like I just lost my mind I keep my eyes on the Portuguese I see their faces change I know I've really pissed them off. Before I know it the two brothers pull out their guns on me I just look at them honestly this is not the time Lilly is still sitting on top of me unbothered well if it was any girl she would be shaking with fear but this is the daughter of the mighty Terminator and Blackeye. I look at her and looks at me with a smile for some reason that give me some sort of pride and encouragement we look back at the guys my men pull out their guns I'm still seated with my Lilly but she really has to go I don't want her to get hurt. Lilly stands up and some men I don't know well they looked like customers they pull out guns and point them at the Portuguese I think they came with Lilly my gang

and I stand up and look at them. I turn to Lilly we both turn to walk out then a shot is fired I immediately pull out my gun I look down at Lilly and she throws a knife straight across my face it hits some guy who was about to shoot me I'm impressed I grab her and put her over my shoulder I start to walk fast and I keep shooting at any guy coming for me next thing I feel Lilly pull out my two guns that were in my back on my waist she lifts her body up I tighten my grip around her legs to give her balance she then starts shooting in what feels like forever we outside the club and there is some snipers shooting inside well I didn't bring them I can't see them but I see the bullets flying into my club. I open the door for her and put her in I go to my side and hop in I immediately drive fast to my place I don't want the police to find me there. We drive to my place in silence I'm trying to comprehend what just happened Lilly just showed me a side of her that I never knew she had. When I get to my place I open the door for her she didn't even break a sweat she still looks just as sexy as she did when she walked in the club she

walks out and I carry her she holds on tight to me with her eyes shut I press the lift and walk in she finally told me that she is claustrophobic the moment it opens on my floor she jumps off me to catch her breath we go to my pad I open for us. I go sit on the couch and breathe out she walks straight to my room after a few minutes I follow her I find her standing in front of the mirror with her sexy lingerie that has ropes I see a set of knives around her waist and one on her thighs she still has her blonde hair on and her heels I look at her through the mirror she has her make up off and she is removing her contact lenses I walk to her and take off my shirt my dick is so hard it's even throbbing in pain she's looking at me with eyes full of lust I slowly run my fingers on her hips as I take in her scent she smells nice I move to her knives I take the strap off and put them next to the guns she was using I take off the strap on her thigh and also put it next to the others. I run my fingers on the stomach to her hips as I kiss her neck she tilts her head to give me more excess I nibble on it as I run my hand all over her body. My hands land on

her soft boobs I squeeze them gently she moans I grab the lingerie and tear it her boobs pop out and that get me excited I move to her underwear and tear it too they all fall down she looks at me through the mirror again her face looks so pink and her eyes look small and red, I spread her legs the fact that she's still in her heels turns me on even more I pull out my dick and rub it on her wet pussy the heat coming from inside it just invites me in I push in and again her tight pussy pushes me out I try again I slide in slowly she moans out loud I whisper in her ear if she's okay she just nods her head I start to move slowly I move my hips in circles and side ways her legs start to shake I feel her walls cling on my dick fuck I know I'm going to come fast I move faster still looking at her to make sure I don't hurt her but she looks like she's in her own world which fuels me up I take her one leg and put it on the bathroom sink my one hand is on her clit working its magic the other around her waist to make sure she doesn't fall because her legs are weak at the moment and she's standing with one I nibble on her ear and I'm thrusting in

and out of her I feel her body shake and her vagina walls tighten around my dick that drives me over the edge the moment she cums and squirts I follow her and shoot my load inside her.

LILLY

I'm laying in bed with my head on his chest we've had 3 rounds and my minky is on fire but I honestly enjoyed myself the pleasure and pain he gave me was out of this world he was gentle and little rough I know he was holding back I just wonder for how long he will be holding back because I want him to have as much pleasure as he does to me. His been softly brushing my hair and it's so nice I even feel a bit dizzy.

Him: Lilly

Me: uhm...

Him: how did you know about the deal I had with the Portuguese?

I knew this is going to come but I know I can not tell him the truth about being Medusa I'm just not ready it's not that I don't trust him and I can not lie

to him because I know he will see right through me.

Me: uhmm... I know you want the truth but I can not answer you right now and I don't want to lie to you so can we please let it go for now and when I'm ready I will tell you the whole truth just know that I have no intentions of hurting or betraying you.

He goes silent for a moment. I really hope he doesn't push me or go look for answers himself.

Him: I hear you I'm sure you already know what I really do for a living right.

Me: yes I know.

Him: that means you might get caught in the cross fire and that scares me I know you can protect yourself but it would kill me if anything happens to you. Lilly I love you right now you the reason why I breath I would do anything for you you my everything.

I turn my head to look up to him he looks down at me I really love this man and God knows I would

lay my life for him I don't care about what he does for a living even though I know the drug business is very dangerous including the enemies he has but I would risk it all for him his my heart in human form.

Me: I love you too and I know you worry about me but you know my parents and they taught me well and I know you would never put me in harm's way so whatever you go through I'll always be right next to you and stand with you I know how important loyalty is and how dangerous things may get but I'm never leaving your side. All I'm asking is never break my heart it beats for you now please don't hurt me.

I see a tear escape his eye I gently wipe it off he kisses my forehead and holds me tightly. I don't know why I feel protective and possessive of him but I just want to love him so much that he actually questions his existence I promise myself I'm going to show him so much love even if it takes everything out of me. We stay tangled together until I fall asleep. I'm woken up by something

poking my ass so I move my hand to remove it because its annoying me I grab it and I hear Max groan softly on my neck I freeze when I realize I'm holding his dick next thing I feel it jerk in my hand I quickly let it go and he chuckles.

Him: since you woke him up you need to put him back to sleep.

He says with his raspy voice it sounds so soothing I could listen to him talk all day. Then my mind drifts to his dick I get wet intensely so I turn around and kiss him I know I have morning breath but it can wait he pulls me closer while kissing me we both laying on our sides. He pulls my leg up to his waist I just want to feel him inside he starts to rub the tip on my minky I deepen the kiss and bite his lip while I moan he slides in I flinch in pain as my lips are still swollen from last night I pull out the kiss and look at his small eyes I love him. He moves in slowly and he groans which makes me even more wet I love hearing his deep voice groan in pleasure it gets me excited I bit my lover lip as

I'm trying to accommodate him. Our eyes are still locked in together.

Him: you still good?

Me: yes please move...

I say whispering I need him to move I want that pleasure he always gives me I start to wiggle myself so that he can move. He smirks at me and grabs my ass and start to move in and out I throw my head back allowing myself to feel the pleasure as it kicks in I feel him lick my neck I hold on his shoulder and moan out his name he groans in my ear as his nibbling on it he starts to move faster he still has his tight grip on my ass he uses his free hand to pull my head back he then kisses me I feel my buildup I know I'm going to come. I pull out the kiss as I scream when the orgasm hits me hard next thing I hear him groan as he pushes roughly inside me I feel him jerk as his shooting his load. Later we finally got out of bed he went to get me a some oils and salts so that I can soak myself as my minky is really painful I've been laying in bed waiting for him to come back it's a good thing that

I decided to put in the 3 years implant while I was at the hospital so we not getting pregnant any time soon. Next thing I hear a knock I know it's not Max because he wouldn't knock so I get up and put on a gown I go open and I see a tall dark guy standing there I look up at him I'm trying to remember where I saw his face then it clicked he was at the club last night he is actually Max's right hand man and friend I think but I doubt that they close he never talks about him. We both looking at each other I'm getting a weird vibe from him I just decided that we don't like him. He folds his arms on his chest waiting for me to say something I just raise my eyebrow I step back and bang the door on his face and lock I walk back to bed I get in the blankets I take my phone and go through my Instagram nothing interesting there .

....hey Entle.

I look over and I see Nobuhle I actually miss her I smile and sit up straight.

Me: hey where have you been?

Her: around doing ghostly things.

Me: uhmmm... how are you?

Her: I'm great I actually come to warn you about the man you left outside.

Me: I knew there is something off about him. I don't like him.

Her: yes so please always be alert about him. I'm actually here to tell you about your future with Max. You going to go through some really hard ships and they will not be easy you will change along the way but please try not to lose yourself Nthombenhle it really doesn't look good I see a lot of blood being spilled and I see your hands covered in blood I wish it was more clearer but it's not. You will have to stand strong Nthombenhle this journey is not for the weak you are stronger than you think you carry your mother's strength I will always be with you just please be strong very strong the storms that are coming scare me they will shake you but your love for Max is what will keep you going.

Me: you scarring me Hlehle.

Her: you should be scared but don't worry like I said I will always be with you it's just nothing looks easy.

I sigh and look at her she has this worry face going on we stare at each other for a while I'm just trying to figure out what is going to happen I'm disturbed by Max walking in with a shopping bag.

Him: I'm sorry I took long the line was really long.

Me: it's okay thank you.

He looks at me for a while I know his trying to figure out why mood changed.

Me: I'm fine I'm just feeling tired I think after the bath I will feel better.

Him: okay.

I know he doesn't believe me I like how he doesn't push me. He goes to the bathroom to run me bath I fix the bed and tidy up since our clothes are everywhere when I'm done I go soak myself I really cant get what Nobuhle said out of my head. Eventually I get out and go get dressed I'm wearing his clothes I go to the kitchen and find him

chilling in the lounge with this guy they both look at me I just look at this guy I wonder what's his story honestly I really don't like him. Max comes to stand next to me.

Max: Lilly this is a friend of mine we call him Bongs.

I just nod my head looking at him.

Me: we've met

Max: Bongs this is my woman Lilly and how do you know each other?

Me: I closed the door in his face when he was knocking this morning.

Max looks down on me confused. I just turn and walk to the kitchen I'm hungry.

Bongs: I didn't know you have a woman.

Max: well now you know.

I can hear them talking from the kitchen I take out some ingredients to cook I can see he bought some groceries. When I'm done cooking I dish up and set the table I call them to come eat. Max is sitting on

the head of the table I'm sitting on his right and Bonga is opposite me. We all start to dig in I'm just too hungry and worried about what Nobuhle said it just keeps playing in my head these two are having their own conversation.

Bongs: so Lilly where are you from.

Me: Cape town

I say while concentrating on my food. I know I'm going to do a background check on him so I won't bother asking him silly questions.

Bongs: you don't talk much do you.

I just look up at him while chewing slowly I see him move uncomfortably on his chair I tilt my head to the side while looking at him. He starts to move his eyes around pussy.

Me: no I don't really like talking much.

We eat the rest of the meal silently. If only I could eat this rice with my hands I would this spoon is annoying me. When we're done eating I clear up and they both leave. I chill watching TV later Max

walks in with take aways he settles next to me and looks at me I just ignore him.

Him: Lilly.

Me: uhmmm...

Him: what's with the vibe between you and Bongs.

Me: I don't like him.

Him: oh... why

Me: I don't know there's a weird vibe about him that's just off.

Him: uhm...okay.

We carry on watching tv cuddling until later he takes me back to my apartment since I have classes tomorrow and he has work. As soon as I get there I go to my laptop and do a background check on this Bongs person I see his Max's right hand man they've known each other for a very long time I don't see anything dodgy about him looks like I'm going to have to trust my instinct here eventually I start doing my work I see the Portuguese are really not happy with what happened in the club but who cares I continue doing my work

everything seems good I'm making a lot of money I'm actually a millionaire now. When I'm done with that I move on to my assignments since I'm now a second year student my assignments are a lot but nothing I can't handle having a photographic memory always works in my favor. I always have been one to remember things amongst my siblings I remember things exactly as they are from the sound, to taste, to smell, to colors, to shapes, to numbers, to faces the list goes on and on even at this age I still remember things from when I was 6 years old just as they are I think that's why I was able to do IT things you don't have to even show me anything twice once is enough. Eventually I finish two of my assignments I'll just print them out tomorrow at campus I actually need to buy myself those mini printers I can't live like this.

It's been a good few weeks me and Max are doing well I still don't like Bongs and Max doesn't bring him around my presence and I appreciate that I've once seen his crew when I went to visit him without telling him and they cool but his really scary when his with them it's like his aura gets

darker the moment he looked at me when I walked in it send shivers down my spine anyway this is my birthday month so normally I go camping with Baba on the first weekend of March since I would normally celebrate it with my family my birthday it's on the 16th of March Ill be turning 19. I'm busy packing my camping bag I already told Max I will be with Baba this weekend he spend the whole week sulking it was so cute and funny anyway I walk out Baba is waiting for me I in the parking lot I find him on the phone I just put the bag in the trunk and go sit in the passenger seat I wonder where we will be camping since we in joburg. We now driving and we've been singing along to the radio I've been taking intsa stories it's nice how we listen to the same music from the 80s to now hip hop and RnB is the best eventually we get to the camping site we set up the tent immediately and start the fire we normally bring meat for the first night and in the morning after we head breakfast we go hunting for dinner that is my most favorite part about camping. Now we just chilling eating marshmallows having a general conversation.

Him: so you and Max huh?

I knew this is coming so I just giggle.

Me: what about me and Max Baba.

Him: I've been waiting for months now for you to tell me what's going on Nthombi ka Baba.

I blush and he bursts out laughing gosh this man.

Him: so now I'm not the only man who can make you blush?

Me: hao... Baba please stop it.

Him: stop what? I'm just making conversation about you and Max and you blushing for no reason.

Me: has someone told you that you like news and drama?

Him: yes khumkani tells me all the time but don't try to change the subject here I want to know what happened while I was gone because when I left you were with that boy and next thing you with Max.

I sigh as I think about the events that happened with Amu he really did hurt me but a part of me is

happy that he lead me to Max because of him I've come to experience the most authentic love I've always seen between my parents I never thought that I will find it but here I am. I start to tell him in detail what happened a part of me is really embarrassed that I have to mention that he broke my virginity but this is my best friend but I will never tell him about my sex life with Max those chats are for Owami anyway by the time I'm done his face looks deadly but his calm.

Me: Baba please don't go after him I'm over what happened and I want him to see me in future flourishing and happy without him.

Him: Nthombi ka Baba you do know that you the love of my life well after your grandmother, when you hurt I hurt when you happy I'm happy so you can not expect me to sit back and say it's okay to hurt my love like that, fine I will not make him disappear but I will obviously make him pay some way.

I'm obviously not going to win this argument so I let him be later we go to sleep. We wake up in the

morning I make breakfast on the gas stove we bought after we eat we go hunting this is my favorite part about camping we find a perfect spot I set up the sniper and lay on my stomach I look through the gun to see my target it's a springbok. Khuhle loves snipers I think his going to end up being a sniper he said he loves it because it's a silent and clean way to take out your target which is true all you need is minimum of 5minutes to study your targets movements then you good plus the gun is silent no bang noises it's very peaceful. I pull the trigger I aimed for the heart I hope I got it. Baba carries it back to the tent and start to cut it we finally braai the meat and eat it over a nice conversation.

I'm now back at my apartment since I told Max I'm back he was here in 5 minutes he even packed my bag apparently I'm spending the whole week with him he missed me his cute. Later we leave when we get to his pad I find his gang there my eyes lend on Bongs gosh I hate this guy I greet them and go to the kitchen to make myself food I see they didn't tell Max that they will be here I can't really hear

what they saying, when I'm done with my sandwich I sit on the high chair and eat.

MAX

All I wanted to do is dick down my woman but these idiots are here to watch soccer imagine I know Bongs being here doesn't sit well with my Lilly worse part she doesn't even hide it that she doesn't like him. I go to the kitchen and she's sitting there eating looking all cute with her chubby dimpled chicks I get the beers for the guys and go back to her, I put my arms around her waist and kiss her neck she's so warm I really want to bury myself into her I think she has turned me into a sex addict.

Her: please stop I'm eating.

Me: I miss you.

I whisper in her ear and nibble on it she smells nice. One thing I've noticed about my Lilly has a very expensive taste she buys things that you just cant tell they are expensive labels because she doesn't buy things that scream for attention her

clothes and jewelry and perfume are really expensive I've never seen someone who buys such expensive things like her she's not like my sisters with them you can see that they wearing labels from head to toe because they make sure you see the brand name but as for my Lilly you hardly ever see the labels unless you look carefully. I'm disturbed by Juice when he walks in the kitchen I let go of Lilly and stand on the counter him and Lilly are having a staring contest I clear my throat and they both look at me. Juice is our hit man and he works under logistics he makes sure that our merchandise is delivered and received accordingly.

Me: how can we help you Juice.

Him: I just wanted another beer and I wanted to see your woman clearly since you always hide her.

I chuckle he goes to the fridge to get his beer and turns to look at us.

Me: what now??

Him: it's just I never thought I would ever see you in love you its so weird.

Lilly giggles.

Me: can you just go since you got your beer.

Him: no I'm fine here the match has not started I want to get to know my other boss.

Me: there is nothing to know here.

Him: oh... there is so much to know after I saw her in action at the club I want to know everything.

Me: Juice....

Lilly interrupts me

Her: it's a pleasure to meet you Juicy.

She says smiling at him did she just nick name him??

Me: juicy???

Him: the pleasure is all mine bozzayam and I love how you say my name.

Her: then from now on you will be Juicy.

Me: juice leave please I want to enjoy my time with my woman.

Him: you always hide her let me enjoy being in her presence while it lasts.

Me: juice don't piss me off.

Him: geeez you so grumpy relax it's not like I will steal her plus I like her she's good for you ever since you met her you less tense.

I move towards him and he runs out the kitchen Lilly is busy giggling here. Later I go watch the match with them as soon as its finished I chase them out I want to make love to my woman now. When I walk to my room I find her sleeping with my t shirt on and her ass in out there my dick jerks I take off my shirt and Jean's I get on top of her and spread her legs she's not even wearing underwear I start to lick her clit gently and eat her up she's now moaning I know she's awake she tries to run away I pull her back she does this every time she's about to cum so I pin her down and carry on eating her she starts to squirt with her legs shaking I pick her up and pin her on the wall with her legs

around my waist I hold both her arms above her head in use my free hand to push my dick in then hold her waist she moans out my name I get goosebumps all over my body, fuck I've missed her so much I start to move in and out she's so wet and slippery and tight I tighten my grip on her waist I still have to keep in mind that I don't hurt her eventually I move her back to the bed I lay her on the edge looking up I spread her legs and look at her minky swallow my dick in I put my thumb on her clit and gently massage it and I thrust her she grabs the sheets moaning louder her boobs keep moving up and down everything about her is just a turn on I start to move faster as I feel my build up I feel her walls tighten inside that drives me over the edge we both cum together. We make love all night forgetting she has classes in the morning, I did manage to wake her up even though it was a mission she looks tired I got her ready for school and dropped her off . This weekend is her birthday I've bought her club and named it Club Lilly its actually a strip club but it's more sophisticated and classy not anyone can afford partying in there I

know she is going to love it I'm going to give it to her on Friday night since it's her birthday for the past few days I've been teaching her how to run a club and restaurant and she's such a fast learner hey I want her to be able to run it herself as it will teach her independence and being boss I just really hope that she will be spending it here in joburg.

I managed to get a hold of her sisters and told them that they must come this side as her gift is here and they were excited about them spending their weekend here. I'm so excited to give her the club I just cant wait even the gang like her well except for Bongs he tries to hide it but I've known him for years and I know his not a fan of Lilly but everyone is just ready to see the club Juice is the one who actually helped me with it I like how him an Lilly have a small friendship it's just I never expected him and Lilly to get along maybe because they kind of the same they both hate most people funny enough he also doesn't like Bongs that much.

Its Friday morning and its Lilly's birthday I'm currently at the club making sure everything is in order Juice is here shouting at everyone the theme is black and white with a touch of rose gold it's very beautiful she told me that all her siblings are here so let me go see her for a few minutes since Juice is bossing everyone around. I get to her apartment and I can hear the noise from her door I'm carrying flowers for her and her sisters and four bottles of champagne I stand there trying to figure out how to knock when someone opens the door he looks at me he looks so much like Terminator actually his the young version of him just a little lighter. I was about to say something when one of the sisters comes to the door.

Her: hey Max it's nice to see you come in.

She says excited and pushes the guy to the side I walk in and they all in the lounge and kitchen Gosh all these boys look the same my eyes are searching for my Lilly I finally see her and smile.

Me: hallo... uhmmm I bought you ladies these.

I say giving the flowers to the sister I'm not sure if its Ulwazi or Nolwazi she excitedly takes the flowers and I put the champagne on the kitchen counter everyone is still silent looking at me this is just weird, finally Lilly walks to me she hugs me and I whisper happy birthday to her and kiss her forehead. She blushes looking down her deep dimples come out to play I just chuckle someone clears their throat I look up and the boys are just looking at us.

1 guy: who are you??

Sister: hai Siyanda behave.

1 guy: Am I talking to you Nolwazi?

Okay let me get out of here before he starts things he can't handle.

Lilly: his name is Max and his my friend.

Siyanda: Can he not speak for himself?

I raise my eyebrow and look at him for a while he returns the look I just chuckle shaking my head I turn my attention to this beautiful shorty of mine.

me: Lilly I have to go now I just came to drop these by make sure you all ready by 8PM someone will come pick you up it's a surprise

Lilly: what kind of surprise please give me a clue.

Me: no just look ready to party I'll see you later.

I kiss her chick and walk out. I suddenly get a bad feeling something is not right but I brush it off today is about my Lilly I go back to my place I chill for a while and I call Juice to send someone to go get the Khumalo babies I get dressed in all black and gold chains I take her gift I bought her this other cute bracelet that I found her staring at on her online shopping I bought a matching necklace and earrings. I grab my keys then I get going when I arrive at the club its already packed outside we didn't let anyone inside only my gang and her parents and Godfather are inside and obviously the staff I was able to talk to her mother to come here and when I told her what I bought for my Lilly she was surprised and happy for her as for Terminator I don't know I haven't seen or spoken

to him. I stand by the door next to the bouncer and Juice we waiting for Lilly and her siblings.

Juice: Max dude why didn't you say she is the daughter of Terminator and Blackeye? I'm not even going to mention Godfather.

Me: it still doesn't make any difference she's still my woman.

Juice: you do realize that when you break her heart you dead right.

Me: and why would I break her heart?

Juice: never mind just know you a brave motherfucker. I would never go for a Khumalo baby.

I chuckle.

Me: that's because you a pussy.

He punches my shoulder playfully. Next thing three black SUVs pull up I see the Khumalo boys hop out looking fly all the females on the line are just drooling at them. The sisters and my Lilly hop out too looking sexy in their short dresses there are three other girls I didn't meet earlier they look

like models but have the same blue eyes as the brothers

Juice: I change my mind I want a Khumalo baby. Fuck these girls look hot.

He says busy cursing next to me I just shake my head and walk to my Lilly she throws herself in my arms immediately. I put her down and kiss her forehead.

Me: welcome to your club.

She just looks at me confused making her funny faces. Her sisters catch on and the start screaming.

Ulwazi: Lilly he bought you a club look!!

She points at the name busy jumping excited Lilly looks at the name its written Club Lilly in rose gold. She turns to look at me with glossy eyes Nolwazi hugs her while she cries the brothers are now next to me.

1 brother: why are they crying?

Ulwazi: he bought her this club as her birthday gift.

The look at me shocked and weirdly.

2 brother: fuck... yeah!! You qualify now let's go party!!

The other three cheer him on I guess these four are the wild ones I look back at my Lilly she comes to hug me.

Lilly: thank you so much I didn't expect such a huge gift.

Me: anything to make you happy come let's go in.

We walk in and the strippers are dancing nicely I like how they don't look ratchet they even have black masks with lingerie waiters are dressed in black and white everything looks beautiful it's full of black and gold balloons everywhere we walk to her family I see Terminators brother and lady that looks like a model she jumps to her mom Terminator just looks at me I return the look. The bouncers start to let people in slowly I get that feeling again something is not right I look around I go to Bongs.

Me: how is the security?

Bongs: the same as other clubs.

Me: Bongs I told you to get extra men here fix this now!

I click my tongue and walk away from him, his honestly starting to piss me off I don't know what's his problem if he didn't want to do it he should've said so I could've done it myself I go to the bar I ask for a glass of whiskey and tell one of the waitresses to take care of the parents table. I gulp it down and ask for another one.

.....: I would slow down if I were you.

I hear a deep voice behind me I turn and find Godfather with a glass in his hand.

Me: yes I know it's just something is not right.

I say looking at him. I walk away from him and go to the kitchen to get her cake they put on those sparkling things the moment they see me everyone start to sing happy birthday to her I actually bought her four brothers some whole week vouchers at my game drive in Limpopo I'm sure they will enjoy it I didn't want them to feel left out since they share a birthday. When I get to her

she's crying in her fathers arms she's so beautiful I'm happy to see her tears of joy her and her brothers blow out the candles and everyone starts popping champagne bottles. I hand the brothers their gifts and they went crazy. Now everyone is busy partying and drinking I still have that uneasy feeling I'm not even drinking Lilly sees me sitting alone and she comes join me she looks at me for a while I know she can see that im not okay.

Her: Max something doesn't feel right I think we should go home.

She says softly looking at me I know if she's feeling it then something must be really wrong.

Me: okay let's go tell your parents that we have somewhere to be then.

She takes my hand and leads me to their table I can see they having fun I'm happy they enjoying themselves.

Lilly: Owami we about to leave so I wanted to say goodnight.

Terminator: and where exactly are you going?

He asks in a serious tone I look at him I honestly just want to be in a safe place with her I'm even thinking of driving to my safe house.

Me: I have a last surprise that is just meant for her.

He looks at me as a father I'm sure his thinking I want to fuck her but honestly I want to give her the gift that I bought for her in left it in the car.

Godfather: khumkani let the boy go.

He just called me a boy I'm not even going to address that I'm really not in the mood. Eventually he agrees after Blackeye convinced him Lilly goes to her siblings to say her tell them she's leaving and Godfather pulls me aside I can see my Lilly laughing with her brothers she's about four tables away from me.

Godfather: Max what is going on I can see that you leaving has nothing to do with any surprise.

I sigh and turn to look at him.

Me: I don't know what's wrong all I know is that I'm really having a bad feeling and I just want to get her to my safe house.

He goes silent and just looks at me for a while.

Godfather: okay make sure nothing happens to her keep her safe Max I'm trusting you with my baby girl if anything happens to her I will come for you with everything I got do you understand?

Me: I understand I would give my life for her she is my everything....

I'm interrupted by a gun shot I turn to look at Lilly and her and the all the Khumalos are the only people who are still standing looking around I see the guy from up the lights but because of the lights I cant see him properly I run to Lilly and pull her into my arms to shield her by now bullets have been flying around she's been wiggling to get put out my grip but I hold on tightly somehow we end up on the floor with me on top of her I really hope I didn't crush or hurt her but I'm not moving away from her until I feel it's safe. As this is going on I feel some pain on my back and a little drowsy I try to hold on to her but my arms feel a bit weak I don't understand what is going on. Suddenly it goes quiet. I hear someone busy calling my name

and Lilly she tries to push me off but I'm too heavy I also try to move myself but I feel heavy and weak.

LILLY

I've been trying to push Max off me his heavy and his suffocating me I finally manage to get him off me when I sit up he just lays there on his back groaning in pain next thing I see blood coming from his back I realize his been shot and his loosing a lot of blood my heart starts to race fast this can not be happening I sit properly and put his head on my lap I gently brush his head he has his eyes on me he looks pale my tears start coming out.

Max: stop crying Lilly you hurting me.

He says that softly with some struggle.

Me: please stop talking I'm going to get you some help okay just don't close your eyes.

I start to scream for my mom. I keep calling her as loud as I can but I don't see her next thing I see Nobuhle in front of me.

Nobuhle: you need to be strong Nthombenhle remember what I said the storm is here now.

Then she disappeared, my dad comes running to me he goes on his knees I keep crying holding Max I cant loose him. I look down on him and he smiles at me.

Max: I left your gift in the car. I love you Lilly

He closes his eyes slowly.

Me: no...no....no Max please don't do this to me please! Max please I'll stop crying please just don't leave me...

I sob loudly holding him the paramedics come in and they pull me off him as they put him on the stretcher.

Paramedic: he still has a pulse but its weak we have to start moving now.

They carry him out I follow them my mom and dad and Baba are with me I go with the paramedics and they follow us behind. I'm holding his hand tightly as soon as get to the hospital they carry him out the doctors take him I just break down my

chest starts to close in I'm trying to breath but it's not happening next thing its lights out.

I woken up by a beeping sound I open my eyes I see Nobuhle laying on my lap looking sick and thin she looks up at me slowly.

Me: Nobuhle what's wrong?

Her: it's your heart Entle its hurting and now I'm hurting I told you this road will not be easy it's time to stand strong for both you and Max.

Then it all comes back I feel my heart break Nobuhle moans out in pain I hate how much I put her through this pain I put my hand on my chest trying to easy the pain I feel my throat dry up as I'm trying to swallow the lump I feel my heart drop to my stomach and my insides turn my chest starts to close in again I try to breath but its hard the doctor and nurse come running in then its lights out again. I'm woken up by people talking I think is Owami and my dad.

Owami: Khumalo what is happening to my baby?

She asks in a shaky voice it sounds like she's about to cry.

Daddy: she is heartbroken Owami I didn't know this is how deeply she feels about him.

He also says softly I feel him hold my hand, right now I'm scared to open my eyes because it will bring me back to the reality that Max has been shot shielding me.

Daddy: remember when you were shot 5 times?

Its silent for a while.

Daddy: I can remember it like yesterday it left like someone is ripping my heart out and when you were in a coma for months I felt like a part of me is dying slowly with every minute you were laying in that bed because it felt like I'm losing you..... (he sighs) I know exactly what she's feeling it's the most painful thing ever and everyone around her will try to make her feel better but she will be too angry and hurt because she will not understand why would he put his life in the line like that she will have million questions for him and no one has

the answers. All I can tell you Owami is that my baby is in pain and she is slowly breaking as she is finding it hard to breath, it's hard to breath without the love of your life, you do not see life without them the grass doesn't look greener on the other side it's just dark everything is black because the only person who brings light in your life is not there so you just walk around in the darkness hoping that you find that light again. You feel empty and numb so eventually you sit there in the dark and pray and hope that they come back.... Owami my baby is struggling to breathe because the reason for her to breathe is not there..

He says in a shaky voice I've never seen or heard my dad cry I feel my tears escape my eyes I open them and I find my dads eyes his tears drop and he wipes them and pulls me in his arms I just sob painfully I feel like someone is punching me in my guts and the air in my lungs is slowly leaving me.

Daddy: Lilly look at me my baby.

He says with his hands on my shoulders looking at me. I keep gasping for air.

Daddy: Nthombi ka Baba breath in slowly on my count 123.. breath in. 123 breath out...

He keeps counting slowly and I start to count and breath with him my heart rate starts to beat normally I still have my eyes on him.

Daddy: you okay baby, you okay just breath that's all you need to do breath...

I feel better that helped.

Me: I want to see Max how long have I been sleeping here.

Owami: for 2 days let me help you and you can go see him.

Me: okay.

I shower and wear the clothes my mom bought for me I asked them that I do this alone so they just directed me to his ward I walk in slowly I find him laying there with all these machines I just feel numb I don't have tears to cry anymore so I just stare at him standing at the door after a while I walk in and sit on the chair I hold his hand and look at him I don't even have words of comfort or

anything so I just sit in silence looking at him what I know is the moment I walk out this hospital I'm going to find whoever did this and make them pay. I'm interrupted by three women and a man walking in, I look at them the older man looks exactly like Max so I guess that's his father the older woman has to be the mother since she has some resemblance to Max including the two girls but it's hard to make out who they really look like since they all have heavy make up they all looking at me.

Max mother: and who are you?? And what are you doing with my son??

Why doesn't she greet? I raise my eyebrow I'm sure I look like a zombie and im trying to gather all the strength I have to be strong for me and Max and this one I can see she was send by the devil to test me.

Max dad: hello young lady I'm his father and who are you?

Me: hello sir I'm Lilly his girlfriend.

His face changes into a frown.

Max mother: my son would never date a cheap skank like you! Get out!

I just look at her maybe its hurt that is making her this rude let me just leave. I stand up as I'm about to leave the Doctor walks in.

Doctor: greeting... I'm happy to see that all his family is finally here I'm actually looking for my Lilly Khumalo.

They all go silent and look at me. I recognize this doctor I've seen him with my dad here and in Cape town since this is my dads hospital.

Me: that would be me doctor can you please tell me how is he?

Doctor: Miss Khumalo Mr. Ngidi suffered a huge damage on his spinal cord as two bullets went through it.

I close my eyes and a tear drops I wipe it off quickly.

Doctor: we were only able to remove one so he is currently disabled from the waist down we will

remove the other bullet on a later stage when he is stronger I didn't want to put too much pressure on him as he also lost a lot of blood. Two other bullets pierced his intestines but we were able to repair them and give him a blood transfusion.

Me: so will he be able to walk once you remove the other bullet?

Doctor: that is the plan once I remove it I can be able to fix his spinal cord but it will take him a lot of work to get him back on his feet he will need some physiotherapy to assist him with that.

Max Mother: I still don't understand why she is still here.

Doctor: well Mr. Ngidi has put her as his next of kin so everything concerning his health she is the one who has the signing power.

Max sister: she's a witch doctor we don't even know her and we are family.

Doctor: unfortunately she has the last say here. Miss Khumalo I need to warn you about the last surgery he may die on the table or end up really

paralyzed permanently so I suggest you think about it thoroughly before the time comes for us to open him up again.

Me: what are the chances of him not walking again after the surgery?

Doctor: 80 or 85% and death is 78%.

Me: we will do the surgery.

Max mother: you are crazy! You want to kill my son.

Gosh why is she shouting? Max will have that surgery and he will make it and he will walk again finish.

Doctor: okay when the time comes I will inform you to come sign the consent forms.

Me: okay.

Next thing a white man with a suitcase and a suit walks in. His father looks at him I wonder why he hasn't said anything.

White man: good day I'm Smith White I'm Nkanyezi Maxwell Ngidi lawyer I'm looking for My Lilly Khumalo.

Max father: why is everyone looking for you?

I just shrug my shoulders why do they even call me My Lilly?

Me: I'm Lilly

Mr. White: there are somethings I need to discuss with you and papers for you to sign we can meet up for lunch so we can go through them but I suggest we do it soon I've been looking for you for the past two days.

Me: okay we can do it now.

Max father: may I ask what is this about I'm his father?

Mr. white: his businesses.

Max mother: we also have to be in that meeting this gold digger wants to steal my sons money.

Mr. White: unfortunately that is not possible as it only states that My Lilly is the only person requested.

Me: Mr. white it's okay they can be present we can go to a restaurant or something.

Doctor: Lilly you can use my office it will save you the trip.

Me: okay doctor thank you so much.

Doctor: I'm sure you know where to find it since you've been here before.

Me: yes I remember.

We all walk out and we got to his office lucky it has a small round table that is able to accommodate us all so we settle down and he starts to pull out all these papers and files.

Mr. white: first I will give you this letter he wrote for you please read it privately.

He hands me the latter. He than puts his hands together and looks at me.

Mr. white: Max has left all his businesses in your hands.

Me: he did what?? I don't want them I can't handle them.

Max Mather: I knew you just came here to suck my son dry.

Max father: I'm sure we can transfer them to me or his brother this little girl knows nothing about business she will run them down.

Mr. white: unfortunately that is not possible the contact he signed does not allow her to transfer anything she is not allowed to even sell them she can only sign them over back to him once he is back and mentally and physically healthy other than that all his hotels, clubs, restaurants and other businesses which I was told you know about belong to you.

For fuck sakes what has Max got me into I run my hands over my face both his parents are looking at me deadly Mr. white is looking at me with worry and pity.

Max father: we can take it to court.

Mr. white: still not possible this is more like a will you can not contest it you will loose.

I sigh where will I even start? Wait what about his drug business I quickly look at the lawyer he looks at me.

Me: you said his other businesses?

He looks at me and he knows what I'm talking about he nods his head.

Mr. white: you also in charge of that.

Me: Jesus Mary and Joseph.

I say with my hand on my face. Is Max fucking crazy?? How the fuck I'm I going to lead a whole gang Gosh I can not see Bongs face all the time I just can't.

Mr. white: don't worry I will inform you in detail about that one it needs time and energy and right now you look exhausted.

His right I'm tired Max is killing me. Eventually we go our separate ways I walk back to his ward I find

an extra bed set up my dad walks in he hugs me I stay in his arms for a while why would Max do this to me.

Daddy: I made sure they set a bed for you incase you spend most of your time here. Just promise me that you will not neglect your school work.

Me: I promise I wont and thank you for the bed.

Daddy: the bag on top has clothes and toiletries that you will need when you here please eat and take care of yourself do not lose yourself in here.

Me: I promise I wont plus I doubt I will be here the whole time I have school and other things to do.

Daddy: okay.

Owami comes in they hug me and leave they are going back to Cape town Owami said she has things to deal with and next week she will come back to check on me. Now I'm left alone I decide to take a shower I stand there in the water this has been a long day my brain is tired I'm more worried about the gang how am I going to be a king pin why would he put me in such a position I just want to

sit here and wait for him to wake up but now I'll be running around running his businesses. First I need to context Lolo to find who ever is behind this. Lolo is Tumelo he took over his fathers business in the underworld his father is Manzi everyone calls him Ruthless he is my mother's right hand men ever since I started Medusa I knew that I will need an army so I contacted him since his the best to provide such, everyone calls him Junior since he takes after his father I'm the only one who calls him Lolo. Eventually I get out the shower and lotion myself and get into my pjs I fall asleep the moment I hit the pillow.

I'm woken up by someone shuffling around I open my eyes I see a two nurses cleaning him up I just look at them closely while they do their job they bandage him and put him gently back to bed then they leave I see the letter Mr. white gave me I decide to open it.

My Lilly if you reading this it means I'm on my death bed. I do not want you to sit by my side and cry until I wake up which is why I made sure you keep busy, I

trust you Lilly you are a Khumalo baby now go show the world what you made of.

I love you.

That's all it says I look him and back at this letter I flip it around to see if he wrote something else but no that's just it. This man is stupid I cant believe him I stand up and go to him I kiss his forehead and whisper.

Me: you very stupid but I love you.

After that I go shower and change I call my grandfather and told him that I want a house he agreed to get me one after asking me 21 questions that were unnecessary I'm sure I'll be moving in this weekend. Anyway Mr. white said I must be ready we going to have a meeting with the gang today I guess he will be announcing that I'm taking over for now. I'm dressed in blue jeans and a white shirt and black ankle boots he told me there is someone coming to pick me up as soon as I get to the parking I see him, his one of Max guards I've seen him around he greets me and we drive of immediately we get to this other place its isolated

I think it might be their warehouse I see Mr. White outside his dressed in all black he looks different in casual clothes his actually hot but his not Max. I step out the car he comes to hug me more like a friendly hug.

Mr. white: morning how are you feeling today?

Me: morning Mr. white I still feel numb.

Mr. white: please call me Smith and don't worry with time you will be much better Max is a strong man he will come back.

Me: thank you, why are we here?

Him: to introduce you to the gang and there is something else I have to give to you. Some of them will not be happy that you taking over just know I have your back okay.

Me: okay thank you.

Him: come let's go in

We walk in and go through the security clearance the moment we walk in we go down the passage passing different doors I wonder what's behind them eventually he opens one and looks like it's a

boardroom I see all the gang members some faces I've never seen before the all looking at me weirdly.

Bongs: Smith what is she doing here?

Smith: relax she has to be here as per Max's instructions.

We sit down it's just silent with me looking at these people who are also looking at me Smith plays something on the projector its Max my heart skips a beat the moment I see his face I miss his eyes and laugh.

Max: it's on?

Background: yes you may start.

Max: okay if you looking at this it means I'm on my death bed I've decided to leave everything in Lilly's hands including this business so what she says goes do not give her problems. Juice you will be her right hand man show her the ropes quickly time is not on your side she is a fast learner so don't worry. No harm must come to her protect

her she is one of us now if anything happens to her I will hold everyone reliable in this room. I'm done
It then goes off I didn't even realize I'm crying I miss him so much it hurts I start to hyperventilate Juice puts a glass of water in front of me I start to count and breath in and out like my dad showed me once I'm able to breath I drink the water Juice gives me his handkerchief I clean my face when I look up I find the guys looking at me with worry and pity except Bongs.

Me: I'm fine guys please sit down.

They hesitate but sit.

Me: uhm.... I don't know why Max would put me in charge but I will step up to the plate all I ask is that you keep things running for this week as I get everything in order and prepare myself.

Biggy: No problem Bozzayam you heard the man we got you.

I smile looks like Bozzayam is really my nickname now.

Me: don't yall have a nice sexier name than Bozzayam?

I ask them they all chuckle and sing no I just giggle then we all leave I'm happy that they okay with me taking over I might have a problem with Bongs but I'll deal with him later. All this week Lolo was able to get the guys for me it turns out it's the Portuguese brothers and their gang Lolo has them for me all of them I even gave him a list of who I want anyone who was involved is here I asked Juicy to show me their slaughter house turns out they don't have one they only have torture room I don't want that I told him to fix one for me. I've moved into my house it's a three bedroom open plan house with a garage, a gym and a pool Owami has send me two of her fighting robots and I've been exercising with them I've pulled out the gymnast team and boxing team I have too much on my plate I don't have time for practice and such. Smith has been showing me how to run the hotels, clubs and restaurants at least people do their work I just check the monthly books and pop in here and there just to make sure everything is running well.

Smith gave me a box that's from Max and today I decided to open it I find keys and a piece of paper with an address and another with numbers. I grab my car keys and go to the address it's a house a mansion actually I drive in with no trouble from the security I walk in and look around it's a typical man house it doesn't have a female touch or feel homey I run upstairs I get to the main bedroom I immediately smell his cologne he never told me he has a house why doesn't he live here?. I see a piece of paper on the bed its written "open the safe in the closet" I go to the walk in closet I see all his clothes and they smell just like him I hold in my tears I look for the safe I finally find it behind his suites there is a sticky note it says "use the number you found in the box". I take it out of my pocket and punch it in and it opens I find a stack of papers and two guns I pull out the papers and there is another note it says "memorize everything that is all you need to know about the business it will help you run it and please keep it to yourself when you done burn them in the fire place". I start to read through the papers carefully to be shocked is an

understatement basically this is a recipe to the drug business from all the countries he supplies and everyone on his payroll everyone thinks that he buys his drugs somewhere and sells them but his actually the manufacture he makes his own drugs even the gang doesn't know this. Max is a billionaire his filthy rich its actually disgusting how can someone have so much money. The papers basically tell me how to make sure that his drugs are done and delivered to the rightful buyers but this side I have to do discreetly without the gang knowing piece of cake that will not be a problem I also deliver for myself so that I can supply the people who are the gangs buyers when I'm done I go down to the lounge and burn them I see his car keys I've decided that I'm going to use his car an leave mine here. When I get to the garage it's full of SUVs expensive cars I take his rover which is the one he normally drives when his with me I hop in and I see a gift box on the passenger seat then I remember he told me that he left my birthday present in the car my eyes get glossy I take it and open it I find the bracelet I've

been looking for it's designed by Cartier it was sold out it has a matching necklace and earrings I put on the bracelet and drive to the hospital when I get there his still looks the same but his loosing weight. I sit on the chair and hold his hand I still don't know what to say to him my phone rings.

Me: Juicy.

Him: Bozzayam

Me: how are you?

Him: I'm good your slaughter room is ready and the men have been moved in.

Me: thank you make sure everyone is present by 8PM.

Him: shap shap Bozza.

He then hangs up I turn to look back at Max I see Nobuhle sitting on his bed she still looks so weak and thin and pale.

Me: Hlehle..

I say with my voice shaking.

Her: remember what I said I told you that you going to change but please don't lose yourself in all of this.

Me: I don't understand what are you talking about

Her: just promise me you will not loose yourself.

I don't know what to say to her how can I make a promise of something I don't even know.

Her: Nthombenhle please..

She says softly

Me: okay I promise

Then she disappeared I stare at Max my heart just keeps breaking with every moment his laying here and I'm just holding on for the sake of the responsibility he has put on my shoulders. I eventually leave later I go to my place shower then dress up in a white jumpsuit its sleeveless it hugs my body nicely it's long I wear it with red bottoms pump heels I straighten my hair and put on maroon matt lipstick. I asked one of the guards to drive me to the ware house when I walk in all the guys are dressed in black everyone is tense I greet

them and Juicy shows me where everything is. I see the camera is set I see the Portuguese brothers they all tired on the chairs naked my anger starts to build up slowly I see the table with all the knives I asked for and cooler boxes with ice everything looks nice and in order.

Me: Biggy please get the camera ready, can yall carry one of them on the table make sure you tighten the belts.

I say everyone is just standing quietly looking at me the only noise is from these idiots trying to scream but their mouths are covered as soon as the guy is put on the table and the camera is ready I pull the table with the knives on I get excited when I see them they even put surgical knives I'm happy it's like they knew I'm actually going to need them. I stand next to the body and look at this guy his busy crying I smile at him his going to die today I need him to remember my face. The gang is looking at me quietly I can see they want to see what I'm planning to do. I remove the tape on his mouth.

Him: I'm sorry I'm sorry please don't kill me I'll tell you everything.

He says crying I don't need him to tell me anything I know everything. I just want to hear him scream I want them to feel the pain I'm constantly feeling I want them to gasp for air like I do whenever I cry for Max or miss him so much that I feel the air leave my lungs. I start to hum ndikhokhele by Jub Jub it reminds me of how me and my siblings would sing it acapella whenever we cook or clean with their deep voices. I put on the gloves I take the scalpel and start to cut him from his chest to his belly button he screams louder I love the sound of it I open his chest and his lungs are fucked up I guess his a heavy smoker I cut them out and throw them on the floor I remove his healthy organs and put them nicely in the cooler box by the time I'm done his dead and im covered in blood. I'm going to donate all their organs to a public hospital a lot of people need them I just hope I removed them properly I watched a medical video on how to perform such a surgery and thanks to my genius brain I can remember all the surgeries step by

step. When I'm done I pluck out his eye cut off his ears and tongue maybe I should start with them with the next one so that I can hear them scream a little longer. When Im done with that I take a big butcher knife and chop off his head it falls and rolls on the floor I go and pick it up and put it in a card box with his ears and eyes these I'm going to ship them back to the Portuguese cartel. I forgot his dick I go back and cut it off and put it in the box with head and close it up all this time I'm taking my time and still humming ndikhokhele on repeat I unbuckled the belts and pushed his body on the floor. I stop humming and look at my gang and they look shaken and scared I look at Bongs for a while I see him swallow his spit slowly and start to vomit pussy.

Me: bring me the next one.

The guards hesitated first then go get the next guy and his really fighting I put my hands together and wait for them they tie him up on the table and I start to hum again and go for his eyes, ears and tongue then move to his dick and finally his organs

this one stayed alive for longer and his screams sounded like music in my ears even though I kept humming my jam, this goes on for a while when I'm done I killed about 13 men this is actually my first kill. I tell Juicy where to drop off the organs and the box that's full of heads I gave them to a guard to give to Lolo he will give them to the Portuguese cartel. As for the camera the video will be send to everyone in the underworld the moment they click on it will play until it finishes then your device will catch a virus and crush this is to send a message that whoever comes for us will meet the same fate and to make sure everyone knows me and don't underestimate me I know some of them will try to disrespect me since I'm standing in for Max. As soon as I'm done I leave the guys to clean up and I go take a shower they actually have bedrooms here im using Max's room when im done I wear his clothes they smell just like him I walk out and go to the lounge im hungry. I find them sitting quietly staring into space lost in their thoughts. I just sit there and grab the pizza

and start eating they look at me weirdly I ignore them and continue eating.

Its been weeks since that fateful night everyone is just walking on eggshells around me I keep having nightmares where I hear them screaming Baba came to me as soon as he saw the video he was fuming mad my dad has been here with me his been helping me cope with the nightmares, I still go to school and handle the businesses and make time to see Max and I also do my Medusa work everyday, everyone knows and fear me some call me the butcher some call me Bozzayam and to make matters worse they know who are my parents so basically I'm untouchable but I'm literally a walking zombie because I hardly sleep but I'm getting better some days are better then others. Max is getting his second surgery next week I haven't seen or heard from his parents since that day I'm not complaining though it's one less thing to deal with I don't have the energy every time I go to sleep Nobuhle is always next to me she doesn't say anything but my mood is really

taking a toll on her she just looks weaker than before and her hair is also falling off.

I'm woken up by my dad shaking me roughly and screaming my name I shoot my eyes open and I'm shaking dripping in my sweat I was having another nightmare I start crying he holds me in his arms.

Me: when does it stop I'm tired daddy please make them stop.

Dad: I'm so sorry Nthombi ka Baba you will be okay soon.

I stay in his arms and cry myself to sleep I wake up and it's now morning I go do my hygiene process and go to the lounge I find him with Baba his been avoiding me since he came screaming and shouting at me I see Owami in the kitchen I greet them and just sit on the single couch.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba

I turn to look at him he looks at me worriedly we stare at each other.

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba..

He says in a shaking voice.

....: I told you that you going to change.

I turn and see Nobuhle sitting on the floor I'm sure I now look like her I've been avoiding the mirror as much as possible.

Me: it's no use saying I told you so now what happened happened. I'm tired

I say to her .

Dad: what??

I turn I forgot about them.

Nobuhle: I know and I told you this is not an easy road I told you the storms will shake you this is not the time to break down Entle you need pull yourself together you need to be strong for you and Max.

I sigh.

Me: How can I do that when I can hardly sleep? Tell me please their screams haunt me in my dreams.

Baba: Lilly who are you talking to?

Nobuhle: I told you I'll always be with you I'll fix it just please try to be in a better mood you draining my energy.

Me: I'm sorry

Nobuhle: it's okay I'll be fine.

She then disappeared I look back at both these men I just stand up and go get ready I'm going to the hospital I need to sign the consent forms. When I'm done I walk out the back door I don't want to deal with them I'm tired as soon as I get to the hospital I sign the necessary papers and go sit with Max I still haven't said anything to him all I do is kiss his cheeks or forehead and whisper I love you when I leave other than that I say nothing. I sit there until its late I decide to sleep on his bed I miss him I snuggle on his arm and fall asleep immediately. I'm woken up by a nurse I've been sleeping for a long time I get off his bed and sit on the couch and watch them clean him up later I go back home when I walk in Owami is the first to hug me I'm happy she cooked I'm so hungry I haven't had anything today as soon as I'm done eating I go

to my room I'm later disturbed by dad he walks in and sits on my bed facing me.

Dad: how are you feeling now?

Me: I don't know.

He nods his head.

Dad: baby who were you speaking too earlier?

I don't know if I should tell him or not while I'm busy contemplating Owami walks in and sits on the other side.

Me: if I tell you I don't think you will believe me.

Owami: tell you what? What are you talking about?

Dad: I asked her who she was talking too earlier.

Owami: Khumalo don't you think you making things worse she's already having nightmares.

Me: I was talking to Nobuhle.

They both look at me weirdly.

Owami: where do you get that name Nthombenhle?

Me: from her... look I know I'm going to sound crazy but I got it from my twin sister she visits me all the time and I can call her whenever I want to talk to her she told me her name is Nobuhle.

My mom covered her mouth with tears streaming down my dad just looked at me blankly. Maybe I should just call her because now I don't know what to say.

Me: Nobuhle. Nobuhle. Nobuhle

I call out and it gets a bit windy in my room she appears she looks a bit better but I'm not happy with her looks.

Me: I just told them about you and now they look like this.

Nobuhle: that's because they still cry over my death.

Me: now what must I say to them?

Dad: is she here?

I nod my head and point at her direction.

Dad: Hlehle I'm so sorry.

He says with glossy eyes.

Nobuhle: tell him it's okay I'm where I need to be and I'm happy.

I tell him.

Owami: how does she look?

Me: just like me but prettier with longer hair but right now she looks kind of ugly.

Nobuhle giggles I do the same

Nobuhle: well if someone decides to work on her feeling I'll get my groove back.

Me: did you just say groove back?? You chill too much with your oldies.

I say giggling.

Owami: what did she say?

Me: she is complaining that she looks ugly because of me.

Dad: I don't understand.

Me: whenever my heart breaks or my spirit is down she feels my pain and it drains her energy and right she looks like someone who is really sick.

My parents sigh Nobuhle comes to hug my dad I hear him gasp she does the same with mom she gasps too while crying.

Nobuhle: tell them to stop grieving for me I'm not dead I'm here even though you the only who can see me I also visit them it's just they cant see me.

I tell them what she said eventually they leave my room for some reason I feel much better. I take my laptop and do my school assignments honestly I don't know how I'm still doing well at school because honestly I've been a walking zombie but my grades did not drop juggling the hotels, clubs and restaurants and my Medusa plus the drug business is a lot and now I told everyone in the crew to come up with business proposals I don't know how they depending on the drug business as their only source of income by next year I want their businesses to be up and running. I told them I will help them with their business plans and

funds as for Bongs he stays clear from me and I'm really happy with that he doesn't make his stupid comments about me anymore he cant even look at me.

Max had his surgery three days ago we've been waiting for him to wake up and right now I just got a call that he woke up I'm driving like crazy to the hospital. My parents left for Cape town last week since I'm much better even my nightmares are gone thanks to whatever Hlehle did Baba is also back to his place he comes to check me now and then. I walk in the hospital and run to his ward the moment I get to the door I freeze his just sitting there watching TV he turns to look at me my heart start to race fast I feel my chest closing up. I grab my shirt as I'm gasping for air.

Max: Lilly breath slowly!

He shouts at me then I remember I start breathing while counting my breathing regulates I look at him again. I slowly walk in my knees are shaking I grab the chair and sit my tears start to come out his really back.

Max: please stop crying please.

He says softly I wipe my tears and look up blinking trying to stop them. He chuckles I look at him.

Him: come give daddy some sugar.

I bust out laughing I stand up and go kiss him softly he squeeze my boobs and I giggle we disturbed by the doctor walking in.

Doctor: welcome back Mr. Ngidi.

Him: it feels great to be back

Doctor: now Lilly can stop having her panic attacks and walking around looking like a zombie you look much better now.

This man is forward Max looks at me with a frown I just ignore him.

Me: how did the surgery go?

Doctor: it was a success all he needs now is physiotherapy and he will be okay in 6 to 8 months.

I sigh out in relief.

Me: can you get me the best physiotherapist?

Max: doctor are you trying to tell me that I can not use my legs?

Doctor: for now yes but with physio you will be as good as new.

He then goes silent his whole mood has changed

Doctor: I'm going to keep you here for a few days and when I'm happy with your healing I will discharge you.

Me: okay doctor thank you.

He walks out I turn my attention to Max who is just staring into space.

Me: Max

Him: can you please leave I want to be alone.

I sigh and leave when I get to my house I call the physiotherapist and get the contractor's to come change the toilet and anything that can accommodate Max with the wheel chair he will stay with me here since I don't have stairs and I don't want him to be alone.

It's been two months since Max got discharged and yes he stays with me I take care of him mostly bath him and help him use the toilet and cook for him and honestly his a pain in the ass. Ever since he came back his aggressive and rude his always shouting and screaming at me and the physiotherapist the first two even quit and today a new one is coming. I understand his frustrations his a man of pride and him not being about to do things himself makes him angry and mean. He doesn't want to see anyone or go out for a walk all I do is go to school and come back to be his punching bag emotionally and mentally I'm tired when he woke up I was happy and hoping that everything is going to be better but it's just hard. I hear a knock I go open I see a tall white lady standing there in tracksuits I guess she is the new physiotherapist I let her in and offer her something to drink then I go to the bedroom to get max I find him laying on the bed throwing a ball up and down.

Me: Max your therapist is here.

He ignores me.

Me: Max

He turns to look at me with a frown.

Him: what is wrong with you Lilly? I told you I do not need a therapist I can do it myself.

Me: and how is doing it for yourself working since you laying here doing absolutely nothing?

Him: hai Fuck off man Lilly! I will walk when I feel like it leave me the fuck alone!

His deep voice fills in this room probably the whole house it doesn't scare me anymore I'm used to it.

Me: Max I'm not doing this with you okay you going to go out there and start working with that therapist and I pray she doesn't quit.

I say calmly looking at him he stares at me he tries to get up I go assist him and he pushes me I trip and fall I stand up and look at him as he tries to get on his chair he struggles and falls I hear him groan in pain my tear drops I quickly wipe it and go to him again I help him up and put him on the chair I

push him out to meet the therapist he just ignores her and he rolls outside where he would normally have his exercises she just follows him I sit on the high chair and breath out this is what I've been dealing with for the past weeks I'm really tired. I can hear him shouting at the therapist calling her stupid I go to the drawer and take a knife I'm tired of this shit I walk outside fast I find the therapist ready to bust out in tears I charge to Max and slap him so hard I feel my hand itch I grab him under his chin and bring the knives close to his nose.

Me: now listen here you stupid fuck I'm sick and tired of your shit. You always behaving like a ten year old busy throwing tantrums that shit stops today. I do not know this man in front of me I want my Max back and you the only one who can bring him back so you better get your shit together and bring my man back or I will slit your throat before you can blink. Max bring back my man! I want my Max back! I'm sexually frustrated and I'm close to losing my shit! I'm tired mentally and emotionally im suffocating and you are busy behaving like the world owes you something (I scream at him

looking into his eye).... I sigh I'm tired... I need my Max please just bring him back to me please (I say in a softly shaking voice)

My tears drop and I wipe them and walk away and go sit by the pool chairs and just cry why doesn't he just take in the help I'm exhausted it's been a long 6 months already I just want my man back for a 19 year old I'm carrying too much on my shoulders why can he see that.

MAX

Fuck this girl can throw a fire slap I think my eardrum vibrated a bit as I'm busy rubbing my chick I hear her crying by the pool side my heart breaks even worse I've been so absorbed in my pride and anger that I fail to see that the woman I love is struggling I look at this white chick and I can see she looks shaken.

Me: look I'm sorry can you please come back tomorrow we will start with the exercises.

Her: okay

She walks out quickly I roll my chair to the pool side and I see my Lilly crying so painfully I feel chest pains I want to go to her and pull her in my arms but I cant. I really need to get myself fixed my woman can not cry like this because of me I really need to get my shit in order.

Me: Lilly..

She looks at me her face looks red including her eyes she is covered in tears. I feel a lump on my throat I swallow it I really hate it when she cries I can't take it.

Me: come..

I say softly and open my arms she rush in them and I hold her tightly she cries her eyes out on my shoulder I really need her to stop crying. Why does she feel lighter and smaller? I think she lost weight this cant be happening.

Me: I'm sorry Lilly please stop crying.

I say softly she just continues crying I've never heard her cry like this I feel like someone is punching my guts I tighten my grip around her I

don't know what to say this hurts. This goes on for a while eventually she stops and she has hiccups.

Me: let's go get you water

She gets off me and start to push me inside I really hate this chair right now I would've carried her inside and put her to sleep but I cant from tomorrow I'll do whatever it takes to start walking again this is too much for her she is young to be taking care of me like this not to mention the businesses I've thrown to her. We end up in bed cuddling she is snoring softly on my chest honestly I've missed having her in my arms I love her so much.

Its been two months and now I'm able to stand and I'm working really hard to start walking Lilly has shown me how my businesses have been doing under her watch and I'm really impressed not that I didn't believe in her it's just I didn't think that they would be doing this well when she told me that the gang have businesses now I didn't believe her until she showed me that their business are used for the benefit of the drug business now we

don't pay people to do work for us but we use the businesses so basically the money is rotating amongst us she said once their businesses are big enough they will open others but it's their personal choice of what they want to open since it will only belong to them and it will be purely legitimate business we will not use them to clean money more like it's their legacies that they will pass down to their generation. I don't know how she was able to convince them into this but I'm happy she did because when I tried it seemed like I was talking a foreign language, now I do not worry about things like logistics, IT, security etc. since the companies are actually a front to move illegal and legal things and some gangs also use our services I'm just happy that they are now making money on the side the drugs are not their only income. I asked her to show me her school work I wanted to make sure that she's not slacking there. I've been doing the work from home and I can see she is happy about that now she has time to do whatever she wants I enjoy watching her fight the robots I cant wait to get back on my feet

she looks like a good challenge a sexy challenge speaking of sexy I haven't had some for months and I'm always horny because she's always wearing her revealing clothes I cant wait till I dick her down.

It's now the first week of December and I can walk now but not for too long and I use a cane I feel so old. I just got dressed in sweatpants and a shirt since Melissa is coming for my physio I walk out and find Lilly sitting on a high chair in a very short shorts and my t-shirt her yellow thighs get me horny immediately I groan frustrated she turns to look at me and her eyes travel to my dick she chocks on her cereal.

Her: I think you should change your pants.

Me: no they comfortable.

Her: did you see that your thing is out there? What will Melissa think?

Me: nothing she's just here to help me walk not for my dick.

She was about to say something and there was knock she went to open and Melissa walked in.

Melissa: morning

Me: hi

I hardly ever talk to her I only answer what she asks and that's it.

Melissa: you ready for your exercise today?

Me: yeah sure lets go.

We walk to the back I ask her that I sit for a moment my legs feel tired she decides to help me stretch them and she's busy stretching and rubbing them I feel her hands move up my thighs I look down at her and she has her eyes glued on my dick I'm not hard but looking at my pants you would think I'm hard. I clear my throat with my eyebrow raised she looks up and quickly removes her hands on me good girl. Eventually we start I'm stretching my upper body she's busy showing me how to twist and turn.

Her: if you feel any pain on your back please stop immediately.

Me: I'm good

I say twisting to my left.

Her: you doing it wrong your hands are placed incorrectly.

She says while walking towards me and starts moving my arms to my waist she then decides to run her hands on my upper arms to my shoulders she then goes to my chest as she slowly moves them to my abs I grab both her arms tightly very tightly her face turns from lust to pain as she flinches.

Me: never put your hands on me like that understand.

Her: I'm sorry

She says softly she's a tall lady and skinny not my type only my Lilly touches me like that not stupid bimbos. I hear someone clear their throat I turn and see Lilly standing on the sliding door with her arms folded I cant read her face she turns and walks inside. I let this one go her hands look purple.

Me: I think we had enough today.

Her: yea I should go. I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: no you wont today was your last day.

Her: but...

Me: let's go

I say walking away from her she can't be anywhere close to me I would kill her because I know she will cause problems between me and Lilly. The moment I walk inside I freeze same as Melissa I find Lilly sitting on the counter eating a lollipop with her knives on her side placed nicely in order and she is putting a gun together looks like she just finished cleaning it.

Me: uhmm... Lilly

She cocks the gun and points it at Melissa it goes off immediately I just close my eyes I hear Melissa screaming next to me I open my eyes and Lilly has an innocent smile on her face but her eyes look dark and cold I've never seen them like this something is really up with her but I cant put a finger on it at first I thought I'm seeing things but

now I know something is definitely going on with her.

Lilly: oops...

Then she giggles Melissa runs out the door crying I think she peed the floor I just shake my head chuckling. I walk to her and stand between her legs I put both my hands on her thighs.

Me: take off your shorts.

Her: why?

Me: I just want to see something.

Her: and that something is under my shorts?

Me: yes

She looks at me for a while then she stands up on the counter I'm just looking up at her as she takes them off she has a pink thong I grin like a chimpanzee I feel my dick jerking when she's done she sits back to her position I start to brush her thighs gently.

Me: I remember you saying something about being sexually frustrated months back.

Her face turns pink and all I see in her eyes is lust. I move my hand to her minky and start to brush it with my thumb slowly I feel her swollen clit looking at her as her eyes get smaller.

Me: do you know how much I miss being inside you?

I whisper in her ear and she moans that drives me crazy. I grab her already wet thong and tear it. I start to play with her minky fuck she's so wet I slip my finger and she moans again this time it's just mixed with her heavy breathing. I pull out and she looks at me with bagging eyes.

Me: talk to me Lilly... what do you want?

Gosh my baby is so horny it's not even funny. I push in two fingers and she throws her head back.

Me: look at me Lilly.

She just moans so I pull out my fingers she looks at me again she looks so vulnerable. I put them back in.

Me: don't take your eyes off me.

She nods her head. I press her clit while moving my fingers on circles inside.

Her: Max please...

She moans out she's so wet I don't think my dick cant hold on much longer.

Me: talk to me Lilly tell me what you want.

Her: just fuck me please.

She says louder she didn't have to say it twice I tore her shirt and her lovely boobs spring out this woman is fucking beautiful I don't care what anyone says. I pull out my dick I slam into her she screams out loud and I groan as I feel my blood rush and goosebumps all over my body no woman has ever made me feel like this I swear her pussy was made just for me. I missed her so much but my back is starting to hurt I've been on my feet for too long but I just need to satisfy my woman.

Her: Move Max please.

She says wiggling her waist, I take her leg and put it on my shoulder she leans back and puts her hands behind to balance I hold her boob and

squeeze it I start moving slowly I'm not going to last I start so move faster her walls start to close in that sends me over the edge before I know it she starts to squirt I press her clit and go faster as I feel my build up I then ram into her she screams as shoot my load inside. My back is burning I pull out my legs feel weak I sit on the chair fuck my back really hurts.

Lilly: Max are you okay?

She asks starting to panic.

Me: it's my back it hurts a bit.

She quickly gets off the counter and goes to get my painkillers she comes back with a towel on she gives me some water and assists me to bed I lay there and she comes back with a bowl with warm water and starts to clean me up since I was covered with her cum when she was done she snuggled next to me with a blanket I pull her to my chest and she wraps her hand over my waist.

Me: I love you so much.

Her: I will blow your brains out next time I see a bitch touching like she did this morning.

I feel the air behind my neck stand up I pull her face up to look at me and her eyes are doing it again they look really dark too dark for my liking I think I should be worried I don't like this at all. Something is up with my woman.

Me: is there something you would like to tell me?

Her: yes there is.

Me: I'm all ears.

Her: I will fuck you up the next time I find a woman close to you like that. I will chop off your fingers the next time I find them touching a woman like you were earlier on.

She said that calmly her eyes keep getting darker and her voice is a bit rusty now I'm seriously worried about her.

Me: don't worry today was her last day working here so I'm going to do the exercises by myself.

Her: don't worry I will help you.

She says that with an innocent smile her eyes glow with love now this is my Lilly not that thing I was talking too. We fall asleep cuddling with her talking nonsense and her weird jokes I don't even know how I laugh at them it's true when they love is blind I think it's also deaf.

It's just after Christmas I spend it with Lilly she made me wear those Christmas pjs and bought a Christmas tree the things we do for love my crew must never see those pictures she took they will never see me the same ever. Today she went to one of my hotels there is a problem that needs her to be there physically I haven't went out even now and I wont until im 100% good and I also need to go back to my place I've been here for too long Lilly and I exercise every morning in the gym and it's been nice and coming good in January I'll be walking properly. I'm disturbed by a knock at the door I go open and Terminator is standing there I just move aside and he walks in he goes to sit by the couch comfortably I get him a cup of coffee I join him and we drink it in silence I could really use a strong drink right now but Lilly said no

alcohol for me I once tried to drink a glass of wine behind her back I just saw the glass break in my hand only to realize she throw one of her knives right at it since then I stay away from her wine.

Him: Max

Me: yes dad.

He turns to look at me with a frown I just grin at him.

Him: call me dad again and I will blow your brains off.

Me: no you wont daddy.

I say grinning at him he slaps me at the back of my head. I get serious immediately.

Me: Lilly is not here right now you can come back later.

Him: don't tell me what to do in my daughter's house you just a visitor. Why are you even still here? You know what never mind I actually came to see you I know Lilly is at your hotel.

He now sounds serious.

Me: okay I'm listening.

Him: did you find out what happened to the people who shot you?

Me: not yet I want to get back on my feet then I'm going after them.

He goes silent okay something is up.

Him: I guess she didn't tell you.

Me: tell me what?

Him: the people who did that to you is the Portuguese.

Me: I'm not surprised there they really not happy with me.

Him: you mean they were not happy with you.

Me: can you just say what you want to say and stop playing.

He turns to look at me for a while.

Him: she killed them.

Me: who killed them Terminator would you just talk.

Him: Lilly she got all 13 of them and killed them one by one.

I close my eyes as I take in what he says to me a part of me is not surprised because of the way her eyes always change now I know why. I rub my forehead as I drop it this is all my fault.

Him: you know what that means right.

I just nod my head for fuck sakes Lilly can not be a killer.

Me: I'm sorry this is all my fault.

Him: yes its definitely your fault Max! But I don't entirely blame you I know Owami would have done the same if she was put in the same position.

Me: worse part is that I even gave her all the resources to do all this.

Him: even if you didn't she was going to find a way the apple doesn't fall far from the tree.

Me: I don't get it. I don't think she would've done it if I didn't let her to stand in for me.

Him: she didn't need your power to do it she has her mother's brains and my guts so believe me she would have done it whether you give her the resources or not.

I just stay silent.

Him: I just came to inform you about what your girlfriend did she's well known in the underworld because she took a video of it and send it to everyone.... Max I saw myself in her I know she will not stop anyone who comes her way she wont hesitate to kill again.

Me: how did she do it?

Him: she went the surgical route while they were still alive she took out all their organs and shipped back their heads and dicks to the Portuguese cartel she really made everyone shake in their pants.

Me: fuck!

Him: yeah be glad you didn't see that anyway I'm here to ask you to keep a close eye on her you know how it gets after your first kill.

Me: yeah thank you.

Him: don't thank me I'm doing this for her I know she will only listen to you.

Me: okay daddy.

I say with a smirk.

Him: I will fuck you up Max.

Me: No you wont.

I say grinning. He tries to come for me I jump up and run to the bedroom and close the door laughing.

Him: open this door Max!

Me: no I'll call Lilly and tell her you hurt my back.

Him: you such a pussy.

Me: it was nice seeing you daddy.

Him: ain't you going to walk me out?

Me: No my legs are tired and my back is painful so bye bye.

Him: fucking childish piece of shit!

I just bust out laughing. My legs are perfectly fine I just lay on the bed and think about what Lilly did I'm really worried about her now that I know the reason behind her dark aura she suddenly developed. I sigh, I'm woken up by Lilly knocking on the bedroom door since I locked it that time. I go open.

Her: why did you lock the door?

Me: your dad was here trying to kill me.

Her: my dad doesn't try to kill he just kills.

Me: oh... so you don't believe me? And here I thought you love me.

Her: what does love have to do with what you saying?

Me: you know what never mind now tell me since when do you kill people.

She freeze immediately and looks at me I raise my eyebrow waiting for her to talk.

Me: I'm waiting Lilly

Her: what did you expect me to do?

Me: watch your tone Lilly.

Her: or what Max?

She says stepping closer to me this cute little Lilly of mine is so adorable I chuckle the apple really doesn't fall far from the tree.

Me: I will fuck you so bad you will wake up in a hospital bed like the first time don't test my patience Lilly.

She swallow hard.

Me: Lilly do you realize the damage you have done?

Her: honestly Max what did you expect me to do? Do you know how it broke me to watch you bleed on the floor and I couldn't even save you? Every panic attack I got every time I thought that I'm losing you? The chest pains I got every night I would cry myself to sleep? Do you know the feeling of watching your life crush and the walls closing in there is literally nothing you can do to fix it? Do you Max? And yet everyone expected me to not break because you threw all your

businesses on my shoulders that was a shit move I'm 19 years old Max why would you even do that. She says crying my heart breaks I step closer to hold her and she steps back now it feels like someone is pinching my heart.

Her: I know very well that had it been me sleeping on that bed you would've done worse so please don't stand there and talk as if you know what I went through in the past months.

She's definitely right I would've done far worse but that's not the point. I sigh

Me: I'm sorry I put so much on your shoulders I never knew that me being in the hospital was going to be so soon. It's just I'm scared and worried about you.

Her: it's okay I'm fine now you here now.

I go sit on the bed and look up at her she walks to stand between my legs.

Me: Lilly you don't get it you've opened a door that you will never be able to close. Once a killer always a killer even if you choose to stop killing there will

be someone or something to trigger you back into killer mode that's not the life I want for you.

We both go silent for a while as she goes to sit next to me I think she is processing what I just said. I pull her into my arms and we just sleep. I don't know what I'm going to do this is hard but we will take it one step at a time.

It's now second week of January Lilly has signed my businesses back and I've been handling things the only thing Lilly does is run her club things between us are great I've even moved into my house before I hated staying there because it's too big for one person so I bought the bachelor pad I stayed in so now that Lilly is always here and she keeps buying new things to decorate each room it feels homey I love having her here. Today I'm going to the warehouse because there is a snitch caught in my gang not just any snitch but a Hawks snitch and Lilly wanted to tag along even though I said no many times she brought out her teary eyes and I don't know what happened but now she's sitting on the passenger seat as I'm driving there.

The moment we walk in the gang goes crazy over Lilly speaking of them they have really changed thanks you Lilly now they are business men they are working with her to open their second businesses they even wear suits and attend meetings it was weird at first seeing Juice in a suit was funny because his your typical Soweto kasi boy but now his just wow. Any way we walk in the torture room and find him beat up I splash a bucket of water on his face and he gasps for air only then I realize its Bongs you must be fucking kidding me. A whole Bongs a Hawks agent really??

Me: really Bongs??

Him: fuck you Max.

I chuckle this is just wow.

Me: why Bongs?

Him: because you and that bitch of yours think you own the world.

I slap him so hard. He then laughs I don't know how to feel I've known this guy for so long we met

in the streets and we've been together ever since and this is how he does me?.

Me: you know what fuck you Bongs.

He was about to say something then I see a knife go through between his eyes he throws his head back and blood start to come out as his eyes are popped out I turn back and I know its Lilly she's the only one here who can throw knife like that she walks towards me and pass me she goes and pulls out the knife from his head and wipe it clean with a clothe I'm just looking at her. She walks back to where she was standing next to Juice I feel my blood boil and juice moves away from her she's just looking at me unbothered.

Me: why the fuck did you do that?!

She looks at me with her eyebrow raised she slowly walks towards me and looks up at me.

Her: in your entire existence you will never talk to me like that I'm not one of your gang members check yourself Max.

She says that calmly and walks away I chuckle and look at her walks out the door this little person is really going to get what she's been asking for.

Me: clean this up.

I walk out the door and go to my car I find her sitting in there busy on her phone I just get in and drive home I pass by McDonald's and buy food for us all this time I haven't said a word to her we get to my house I park the car and get out to open the door for her she hops out holding the food I take it and she walks in front of me she's wearing a tight black dress her big ass looks nice when its moving left to right I lick my lips she opens the door I put the food on the counter and follow her upstairs to her to the bedroom she throws herself on the bed I close the door and lock it she looks me.

Her: Max what's going on?

I just look at her for a while. I take off my shirt and walk towards her she I'm jumps off the bed and tries to run to the bathroom but she's not fast enough I grab her from behind and hits me with her elbow on my stomach but I can take it. She

turns around and punches my jaw I taste my blood inside I throw her on the bed and take off my pants as I walk to her she tries to run again I grab her leg and pull her I tear her dress and get on top of her.

Her: Max please don't do this.

Me: No Lilly you think you the man in this relationship right?

She tries to push me off I grab her hands and pin them on top of her head I grab her lace underwear and tear it.

Her: I'm sorry please Max.

I rub my dick on her minky while looking at her I feel her slowly getting wet I gently push myself in normally my dick goes in half way I never put all of it in as I know that I'm going to hurt her but today I need to teach her a lesson the only way I know how. I drop my head to kiss her and she responds to it I start to move my waist slowly she moans in my mouth good she's enjoying herself I push in the rest of my dick and she screams I stay

inside and not move allowing her to adjust to my size I don't want to hurt her too much.

Her: it hurts Max...

I start to move my waist again and she moans louder I see her tears coming out I pull out and flip her over to her stomach I spread her legs and arch her back she tries to run again I pull her back and grab her throat from the back not too hard though I push myself in again slowly I lean forward to her ear.

Me: who is the man in this relationship Lilly?

She sniffs I know she's crying and it breaks my heart but they won't work today. I push myself in her further she moans out.

Her: its you...

Me: then why do you do as you please?

Her: Max please...

I just push the rest in and screams out loud.

Me: today I'm going to fuck you until you can't feel your legs for killing someone.

Her: I'm sorry..

I start to thrust in her and she's been screaming in pain and pleasure. I go faster as I feel her build up I pull out.

Her: Max I said I'm sorry please....

Me: I want to remember this day when you think of killing someone.

I put it back in and start over again this time I'm rough with her I still have my hand on her throat choking her gently I haven't had rough sex in a while and now I'm enjoying myself not too much though I don't want her to end up in a hospital but she wont be able to walk though. I pull out again as I feel her orgasm getting closer and now she's really in tears this goes on for about a while I flip her over again seeing her face covered in tears that hurts my heart.

Me: Lilly I'm not going to have a wife as a killer.

Her: but I didn't like him

Me: clearly you haven't learned your lesson

Her: no....no...no Max please

I spread her legs and go in she keeps crying I fuck her again and pull out when she's close I do it again and again and again by now I know she has learned her lesson so I decide to give her what she wants I put her nicely on the bed I get on top of her I go in her slowly I lock both my hands with hers her whole face is pink including her eyes.

Me: what did I say Lilly?

Her: you don't want a killer wife.

Me: who is the men in this relationship?

Her: you are.

Me: good girl

All this time I've been moving my waist gently as I make love to her I kiss her she tastes salty I deepen the kiss and she moans softly she sounds tired eventually she cums and passes out I clean her up and cuddle her as I fall asleep. I'm woken up by her wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip.

Her: I need to pee let go.

She whispered.

Me: okay let me carry you.

Her: no I'm fine.

Me: uhmm..

I untangle myself from her I feel her move out next thing I hear her fall I bust out laughing I open my eye and look at her she's so cute.

Me: can I carry you to the toilet now?

She just looks at me annoyed I laugh at her again and get out of the bed and carry her to the toilet I put her on the seat and watch her pee she flinches shame man. When she's done I go to wipe her and carry her back to bed.

Her: I want to bath I don't want to go back to bed.

Me: no I want cuddles we will bath later.

Her: Hai Max what is your problem?

Me: do you want to walk yourself back to the bathroom and bath?

She pouts she's very cute I just kiss her pouted lips we cuddle for a while then I go to make us something to eat then later bath in her oils and

salts they actually smell nice but now I smell like flowers. Now we chilling watching TV.

Me: how are you feeling now?

Her: No sex for you till further notice.

Me: you wouldn't dare.

Her: watch me.

Me: Lilly you cant do that.

Her: uhmm...

I go silent for a while.

Me: Lilly?

Her: Max

Me: you playing right?

Her: no I'm not.

Me: mxm... I know you playing.

Her: uhmmm...

She wouldn't do that right? I mean she also gets horny from time to time right?. You know what I'm not going to stress myself about Lilly.

It's now February and valentine's day is coming I don't even know what people do with this day I've never celebrated it but I have restaurants I'm sure I can make a plan I've seen some men book dinner dates and all those things I'll ask one of my managers to organize something nice. Everything between Lilly and I are good and business is doing well everything is just well I don't have any complaints so far.

I'm currently sitting across from her I booked the rooftop at the restaurant for this valentine's day thing she looks beautiful with her white slit dress she actually loves white dresses and slits and honestly she has beautiful legs so I'm not even complaining but I do get a bit jealous when men look at her.

Me: why do you look nervous? Don't you like this?

She's been making her weird faces since we started eating and moving uncomfortably on her chair.

Her: uhmm... it's nothing I love this stop worrying.

Me: Lilly you don't look comfortable we can leave if you want we don't have to stay here any longer.

She gulps her wine glass and refills it and gulps it again okay now I see that something is really going on here.

Me: Lilly?

She stands up and takes my hand.

Her: let's go home.

Me: oh...okay are you sure you okay?

Her: yes Max let's go now please.

I just stand and she pulls me by my hand to the car we now driving back home and she's been silent looking out the window maybe I should just wait for her to open up I know better than to push her. I pull up in the drive way and walk out to open the door for her when we get to the door she stops me I look down at her.

Her: can I blind fold you?

I raise my eyebrow okay what's going on?

Me: why?

Her: please it's a surprise.

Me: okay...why do I have a feeling that you going to kill me.

Her: if I wanted to kill you, you would be dead by now and you know that so relax you not dying today.

She ties a black cloth across my eyes. She then opens the door she takes my hand and walks in slowly I honestly don't know what is going to happen to me I don't even know how I agreed to this nonsense.

Her: we about to go up the stairs so walk slowly so that you don't trip.

Me: okay.

We walk up slowly eventually we at the top she keeps walking holding my hand as she is leading me eventually we stop.

Me: okay what now?

Her: shhhhh...don't take off the blind fold I will do that myself.

Me: okay.

She starts to take off my clothes.

Me: why are stripping me?

Her: shhhhh...

Me: don't shhhhh me are you going to rape me?

Her: maybe would you just shut up.

She takes off my pants now I'm left with my boxers she takes my hand again and starts walking she stops me and turns me around and move me to the left.

Her: okay sit down there is a chair behind you.

I do as she says I can hear her move around she's now behind me and she takes my hand I feel her hand cuff me.

Me: Lilly what....

Her: sshhhhhh...

Me: but Li...

Her: shhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh....

Me: mxm.

Next thing she's busy fiddling around then I hear music playing through the speakers not too loud not too soft Sevdaliza- Human is playing she takes off the blind fold and we in our bedroom the light looks red and dim I see a pole in the middle just a few feet away from me. What is going on?

Me: Lilly...

She whispers in my ear.

Her: relax now enjoy the show.

She then walks in front of me my jaw drops immediately she wearing one of those kinky lingerie with strings going on her body looks amazing. She holds the pole and walks around it slowly she turns to look at me her boobs look amazing in that lace the first beat drops and her legs go up spreading with her waist twisting around the pole my jaw drops even further to the floor she moves to every beat and instrument smoothly the way she's working that pole she looks like a snake wrapped around it every time the base comes through she does an exotic move and it feels like the room just vibrates with her.

There's a moment when she looked like she's falling and her face stopped inches from the floor and the pole between her thighs I jumped on my chair but these handcuffs held me back I know she is very flexible but I've never in my entire life seen her beautiful legs move like that. The way I'm so horny my body is even shaking I feel like crying right now I would be already fucking her but these handcuffs are frustrating me. She's driving me crazy I've been to so many strip clubs and seen a lot of woman strip but non of them where like this. When she's done she walks slowly to me now Beyoncé- Rocket is playing she leans close to my face and gently pushes my jaw back up I swallow my spit my throat is even dry and she starts giving me a lap dance slowly her ass keeps pushing on my ready to pop dick her soft hands keep touching me and sending shivers down my spine when she's done she goes on her knees and pulls out my dick its dripping wet with pree cum she starts to stroke it gently while looking at me I feel my sweat on my forehead run down I've never been in such a position before where a woman has me at her

mercy like this I swear if she asked me for anything I would just agree to whatever. She drops her head and start to lick my dick fuck she's teasing me I keep wiggling trying to get out of these handcuffs next thing I feel her deep throat me in throw my head back groaning I haven't had a blowjob in a while and this is the first time she gives me she starts sucking and squeezing my balls gently and a hand job I can't take it anymore I'm really trying to hold it in but she flips her tongue and twisting while deep throating me I just bust in her mouth groaning out loud as my body shakes fuck I didn't even last 5minutes I catch my breath and look down at her and she has a smirk on her face I wonder who taught her all these things.

Me: get me out of these handcuffs.

Her: no

She says as she standing up.

Me: Lilly...

Her: Not yet my love.

She then puts her leg on my thigh. She's standing between my legs with one leg and her beautiful shaved minky is looking right at me now I'm just drooling she grabs my head pulls me closer.

Her: eat up

She didn't have to ask me twice I just drowned my face in her wet minky. I kept sucking until I felt that she is close to cuming she pulled my head back and started to play with herself fuck this is so much torture how can she do that right in front of me I try to go back it but she just pushes my head back while rubbing her clit she then moans out my name loudly and squirts right on my face I just close my eyes and wait for her to finish when she's done she drops her leg on the side and moves the other one to my other side now she's sitting on top of me looking at me I look at her with so much lust I just want to be inside her. She starts to kiss me softly biting my lips I wiggle in these handcuffs because I want to hold her. She moves from my lips to my neck she keeps licking and sucking it my head feels dizzy I feel her take my dick and push it

inside her minky slowly I groan as I feel her warmth I look down and see as her minky swallow me I thought she's going to stop half way but no she takes it all in as she moans this turns me on even more I look back at her she doesn't take her eyes from mine God what did I do to deserve such a woman. She starts to move her waist slowly trying to adjust to my size she then starts to move a little faster her boobs on my face move with her rhythm. I want to hold her but fuck the way she's riding me it's just sending me to cloud 9 I've never had a girl ride usually I'm the one in control and doing the fucking but clearly that's not going to happen today. She starts to move in circles and moaning out my name I feel goosebumps everywhere I don't know what she's doing to me I've never experienced it before but I don't want her to stop.

Me: Marry me Lilly

I say as I groan out I feel my build up she's also close she just starts jumping up and down fast fuck fuck fuck this girl is killing me before I know it we

release together. This right here is the best sex I've ever had in my entire life we breath out as she has her head on my shoulder I feel her take off the handcuffs my joints feel weak I just wrap my arms around her and hold her I'm still inside her but she drained so much of my energy in two months I'll be married to her I don't care who says what.

I'm staring at this sleeping beauty next to me trying to figure out what exactly happened last night because I couldn't even go for second round all I did was hold on to her for dear life the whole night. I just don't understand how can a small tiny person like her have so much power over me here I was trying to give her the best valentine's day experience and yet I'm the one who got surprised. I decide to get out of bed my knees still feel weird I turn to look at her again I really cant believe what she did to me. I order breakfast for her and go shower when I'm done she's still sleeping her breakfast arrives I plate it put it on a tray and go put it on the side board and walk out. I drive straight to my fathers house well home I arrive and park my car I can see his still home I walk in

the house I find everyone eating breakfast even my brother and his bimbo wife are here she smiles widely when she sees me I just keep my serious face my mom jumps up to hug me I just stand there and pat her back twice she let's go of me and pulls me to the table she organizes a plate for me I greet everyone my sisters are just glued on their phones.

Michael(brother) : what do we owe the pleasure of having breakfast with you today?

Mom: Hai Michael leave my son alone I haven't seen him since that day at the hospital I thought I was loosing you.

She says looking at me funny enough because they only came once and that's it.

Me: I'm actually here to see you dad there's something important I wanted to ask you.

He looks at me I honestly don't understand this man if I didn't look like him I would really question my paternity.

Dad: let's go to my office.

Me: no it's not that deep I just wanted to tell you that there is someone I want to marry so can you gather the uncles to come help me pay lobola for her.

My brothers wife chokes on her food I just look at her.

Mom: don't tell me you talking about that cheap skank I found at the hospital.

I frown looking at her she swallows her spit.

Me: I'll pretend that you didn't call her names for the sake of peace. So dad tell me can we do what I requested as soon as possible?

Dad: Nkanyezi tell me here why would you go get a poor girl who brings nothing to the table and want to marry her? Why do you always insist on embarrassing this family?

I just raised my eyebrow looking at him he clearly doesn't know Lilly's family they can buy this family and still not feel their bank balance shake. I think I'm going to enjoy this because he has a few

businesses with Godfather actually Godfather owns some shares in some of his companies.

Me: dad if you don't want to do this just tell me now so that I can call uncle Joe to do it for me.

Well uncle Joe is our drunkard uncle his older brother they live in KZN my dad hates them since he calls them poor and I love him.

Dad: fine Nkanyezi you don't have to call him I'll do it.

Mom: my husband please you can not agree to this.

Me: I want to be married by the end of March so please move fast.

Mom: what is the rush? She's just a gold digger so she must wait!

Me: ma this is the last time I warn you about calling her names especially in my presence if I hear you again I will forget that you gave birth to me.

Everyone is just silent now I stand up and go back to my Lilly I miss her.

LILLY

It's now the first week of March Owami has summoned me home this weekend and it sounded serious I wonder what's wrong I just hope everyone is okay. I'm sitting in the jet I left Max sulking ever since valentine's day his been clinging on me like a bubblegum on a hot day I hardly ever drive his my chauffer now sometimes its annoying as fuck I know very well that his going to follow me to Cape town. I arrive home and all my siblings are not around Owami says they at the house they stay in since they at school so its quiet. I'm chilling in my room busy finishing off my assignment I'm happy that this year we go for our work integrated learning for the last 6 months of the year I know I'll be going to H Accounting since they gave me a bursary I don't mind but now it's called Numbers because it was bought by someone anonymous anyway Owami just text me to come down for dinner so I'm heading down the moment I get there I see my dad and Baba already sitting I go kiss them both and sit down Owami comes and settles next to my dad I'm sitting next to Baba. We now eating in silence well this never happens

unless something serious is really going on so I just stay quiet and eat my food Owami keeps looking at me and making her weird faces I just ignore her. After dessert I stand to clean up the table when I'm done my dad calls me to the lounge I find them sitting waiting for me I just sit on the single chair.

Dad: Nthombenhle are you pregnant?

What??

Me: huh?

I say looking at my stomach confused and back at him.

Dad: you know I don't like repeating myself.

Me: eh... okay I'm not pregnant, daddy where is this coming from?

Baba: Nthombi ka Baba don't mind your stupid father. Last week we received a letter from the Ngidi family asking for your hand in marriage.

Me: who is the Ngidi family? And who's hand are you talking about?

Owami: Entle Max send us a letter to pay lobola for you. He didn't tell you about this?

I then remember he asked me to marry him when we were having sex on valentine's day I smile thinking about how submissive he looked.

Owami: Entle stop day dreaming and tell us did he propose or something?

Me: uhm... he kind of did propose.

Dad: what is kind of propose Nthombenhle?

Baba: Hai shut up khumkani you didn't even propose to Nkosazana here.

Owami and I giggle she did tell us how she rejected dad when they asked to pay for her lobola.

Dad: why do you have to bring that up?

Baba: because you forward at least he asked unlike you.

Dad: mxm.

We laugh at him

Owami: Entle so do you want to marry Max?

Do I? I don't know.

Me: uhmmm... can I give you an answer before I leave on Sunday.

Dad: you can just say no baby you don't have to marry him.

Owami: would you shut up Khumalo. It's okay Entle we will hear from you.

We chill till late talking nonsense when I get to bed I call Max he was mad that I took so long to talk to him I just rolled my eyes.

Me: why didn't you tell me that you send a letter to my family?

Him: oh.... They got it already great!

Me: no not great Max.

Him: how is it not great? I asked you to marry me Lilly.

Me: and I didn't say yes plus we were having sex.

Him: and you didn't say no so what if we were having sex it doesn't make any difference.

Me: you were pussy whipped Max!

He busts out laughing I join him I just cant resist his laugh.

Me: I'm serious Max you would've agreed to anything I said at that moment.

Him: Lilly I know what I was saying okay you giving me the bomb sex has nothing to do with you marrying me.

Me: was my pussy that good?

Him: you have no idea Lilly that's why I need to put you on lock down.

I laugh at him.

Him: on a serious note though I'm serious about spending the rest of my life with you please be my wife Lilly.

I keep quiet I love him honestly I don't see life without him his my everything I suddenly get overwhelmed in a good way though my tears come out. I sniff

Him: Lilly please don't cry you hurting me.

I giggle his cute.

Me: I'll marry you Max.

Him: really??

Me: yes really.

Him: struu??

I laugh.

Me: goodnight Max.

Him: no don't hang up I want hear you snore and fart.

Me: I don't do that.

Him: sleep Lilly.

Me:mxm

Eventually I sleep still on the phone with Max. I'm woken up by someone singing its Max on the phone I groan and push the phone on the floor.

Him: Lilly! Lilly!

Me: Voetsek man Max!

Him: I would like to hear you say that in my face.

I just groan and put the pillow over my head.

Him: Lilly! Lilly! Lilly!

I get out of bed and take the phone.

Me: what is it Max?

I ask calmly I'm so annoyed right now. He was about to say something then I just hang up I went to shower and clean up my room after I went to the kitchen I'm hungry Max kept blowing up my phone so I just left it in my room. I found Owami eating cereal on the counter so I join her and start eating.

Me: I'm getting married.

She looks at me.

Her: to big dick Max?

I choke on my food and cough I see Nobuhle giggling next to her.

Me: Ma please don't call him that. By the way Hlehle is next to you.

Her: oh... hey baby

I smile Hlehle greets her back.

Owami: tell me how did he propose?

I just look at her I cant tell her that I was ridding his dick.

Hlele: uhmmm... tell her that you had him in handcuffs.

I choke on my food again.

Me: Hlehle you cant watch us have sex what's wrong with you?

Hlehle: I wasn't watching I could hear his scream from the spiritual world.

Owami: I'm lost please tell me what's going on.

I look at her.

Hlehle: dick rider

She whispers giggling. I throw the dish clothe at her it just goes through her and lands on the floor.

Me: leave Hlehle.

Owami: Hai Entle this is my house you cant chase my baby out.

Hlehle sticks her tongue out I just roll my eyes.

Owami: Nthombenhle tell me man I'm waiting.

Me: we were having sex okay!.

Her: your pussy is that good??

She asks shocked Hlehle busts out laughing.

Hlehle: tell her about the handcuffs.

Me: would you just shut up.

Owami: what did she say?

Me: nothing.

Next I see handcuffs fly on the counter in front of us where did she even find them?.

Me: why are you haunting us?

My mom takes the handcuffs and looks at them confused she then looks at me and back at them then at me shocked.

Hlehle: ding ding ding.. Now the lights are on

Owami: you kinky Nthombenhle??

I just giggle.

Owami: how did you even use them?

Me: I tied him on a chair.

Owami: details Nthombenhle!

Why is she so excited?.

Me: Ma please I cant tell you about my sex life.

Owami: Hai Entle I gave you that body so technically it's my pussy that is lit lit.

Me: Gosh Owami you didn't have to say that.

Owami: then talk!

Me: I installed a stripping pole in his room and took some classes so on valentine's day I planned the whole thing from the pole dancing to the lap dancing then ride him on the chair.

I give her details by the time I'm done her jaw is on the floor with her eyes popping out.

Me: try it on daddy he will give you anything you'll see.

Owami: I can't believe you giving me sex tips you are aware that you my last born right.

Me: you insisted that I tell you so you can't complain.

Hlehle has been sitting on the counter swinging her legs just laughing at us.

Owami: I'm just wow you really kinky Entle I will never see you the same.

Me: ahhh

I say shrugging my shoulders. Hlehle giggles.

Hlehle: dick rider!

Me: mxm tekoloshi!

Owami: Voetsek Nthombenhle don't call my daughter that

Owami smacks my hand as she says this I just laugh out loud we chill together talking and laughing this is nice I really wish Hlehle was alive I would've loved having her around and doing things together. Eventually I head back to Johannesburg im so happy and content with how my life is going I know getting married at a young age is a bit scary but thanks to Owami and Hlehle my fears are gone. Owami gifted me with the Numbers company apparently I'm the anonymous owner I don't care how she pulled it off but I'm grateful now I'm going to keep Amu as the CEO of my company I can not wait to see his stupid face now that I'm in my happy place watching him suffer and being embarrassed is going to be so

much fun. I find Max already waiting for me here comes my chuppies I run to him and throw myself into his arms he picks me up and I wrap my legs around him I've missed him so much now I'm the clingy one, he tries to put me down but I just tighten my grip around him he just starts walking to one of the guards and gets in the back seat he drives us home I'm woken up by him fiddling I realize we still in the same position in the car.

Him: I'm sorry I woke you up we home now.

Me: okay.

He gets out the car and walks in the house and heads upstairs to our bedroom.

Him: let me take of my clothes then we can cuddle.

Me: okay

He puts me gently on the bed and starts to undress Gosh Max is just sexy honestly how his muscle always move with him plus the tattoos just makes look extra he has this bad boy sexy look with him.

Him: stop raping me with your eyes

I just blush he comes and takes off my clothes and pulls me on top of him I lay my head on his chest.

Him: sing for me.

He says softly he likes asking me this at first I found it very weird but now its become our thing whenever we cuddling in silence or when he comes home from a long at work he would just cling on me and ask me to sing for him. I start to sing No Pressure by Mahalia followed by Sure Thing by Miguel he just keeps running his fingers on back sending shivers down my spine and goosebumps all over my body. My level of intimacy with Max sometimes scares me how we connected to each other is just amazing and weird we able to think the same thing and have the same feeling about a lot of things we even mirror each other's emotions when one is sad and down it also affects the other even when I'm at school and his having a bad day I just start to feel uneasy and I know its him and when his angry my heart rate just keeps going on and on and the only way it cools down is when he cools down. I also have the same effect on

him which is why he hates seeing me cry or in pain and whenever we this close our hearts beat as one at first I thought I was just imagining things but I started to pay attention to it and realized that it actually beats at the same pace as his maybe that's why we both know when the other is not okay.

Me: Max

Him: uhmmm...

His chest vibrates whenever he makes such sounds or when he laughs.

Me: there's something I want to tell you before we get married.

Him: I'm listening.

Me: uhm... I'm Medusa.

Him: I know.

Huh?? I sit up straight with my legs on his sides and my hands on his abs his are on my thighs I look at him for a while he really does know.

Me: how?

Him: I put the dots together remember you do my accounts so I know how you move my money obviously so when I made you the leader of my gang and you started making your changes and how you started their businesses and created funds for them it was too familiar to your work as Medusa you have a signature that you leave behind so I put the dots together and figured it out I was just waiting for you to tell me when you ready.

Me: I don't know what to say.

Him: well at first I was surprised that you didn't depend on your parents legacy you making a name for yourself without standing in their shadow even though you started just like your mother but I like that you not using them to climb up the ladder I even tried to track you down just to see if you being careful and honestly I'm impressed you clean it's like you don't exist like there is Medusa and we all know that she's there but you not there at the same time I looked at the other gangs you work with just to see if you left your signature

move like you did with mine and it was a different signature all together I'm very proud of you Lilly.

I blushed looking down he chuckled.

Me: so you don't have a problem with me being Medusa and my work?

Him: not at all you behind the computer and no one knows you so you don't have to keep looking over your shoulder all the time but im more worried about how other Mafias want you for their personal greed but like I said you clean so nothing traces back to you or anyone in this continent just keep it like that then we good and if you happen to come out in the light we will deal with it together.

I feel my tears come out I'm happy he doesn't want to tame me or hold me back my independence and making myself known is really important to me I thought he was going to have a problem with me being in the underworld.

Him: come here.

I go down into his arms.

Him: I would never dim your light Lilly plus having you as boss really turns me on so I can never deprive myself of such.

I laugh.

Me: why would you turn such a beautiful moment into your fantasy?

Him: my fantasy is a beautiful moment please don't ruin it for me.

We were interrupted by Owami calling me apparently the Ngidi family want to pay lobola this coming weekend so everything will be done at KZN.

Me: why are the lobola negotiations have to be done so fast?

Him: because by May I want you to be Mrs. Ngidi.

Me: Hai ... Max what is the rush we have all the time to get it done.

Him: and why can we not get it done now?

Me: well.... There is no reason but don't you think we should be engaged for a little?

Him: no I want you to be my wife you can enjoy being engaged this week.

Me:....

I just look at him his actually serious if I didn't love him as much I do I would have said no. Looks like I'll be a Ngidi bride sooner then I thought.

MAX

We currently in KZN tomorrow we playing lobola for Lilly I'm very excited my parents are just annoyed as fuck. We at my dads home he actually fixed the house it's big and beautiful my uncle Joe and my dads two sisters which are my aunts live here with their children none of them have even been married but they all have children.

Joe: mfana I hope your wife is not like your brothers wife here and your mother.

This is why I love uncle Joe he always tells it like it is.

Dad: he bought us a white girl I wonder what village she comes from because you can tell she is adopted I'm sure.

A Lindi: Hai Nkanyezi how will she do her makoti duties?

I actually wonder if Lilly can even start a fire but I don't care because my mom cant even lift a finger for a woman who comes from a village she's just lazy.

Joe: she's not coming here to make fire for you Lindi you should be married by now but you here with your three kids who run around with old men.

Aunt Lindi clicks her tongue and walks away followed by aunt Joyce because they both know when Joe starts talking about them not being married and having kids with multiple baby daddies he will not stop but he has 5 baby mamas and he has 6 kids they all live with the baby mammas.

Dad: why are you not married.

Joe: I would be married to all my baby mamas I love them but I'm poor so I'll just love them from afar.

Me: all five of them?

Joe: yes all five of them its just they like too much money man.

We talk all night with him telling us his stories about his baby mamas his hilarious him and Lilly are the only people who know how to make me laugh, we later to go bed this is going to be a long week after the lobola negotiations during the week she has to prepare for membezo and our small wedding after we going to stay for a week but at least she will be on recess by then when school opens we head back to joburg as Mr. & Mrs. Ngidi. I woke up at 3am prepared for going to the Khumalo household when I got down stairs all my uncles were there I greet them and settle down.

Uncle David: Nkanyezi how much are you willing to pay for her?

Dad: I think R50 000 should be enough.

I look at this man and shake my head.

Me: whatever they want give it to them do not argue or negotiate.

Dad: Nkanyezi you not going to waste money on a girl who is not even educated I'm sure she was not a virgin and she didn't finish high school.

His starting to piss me off.

Me: you shouldn't be worried it's my money after all uncle Joe just please do as I say I found her sealed.

He just nods his head I don't care that Lilly was not a virgin when I found her she's mine now so they must just get with the memo. Eventually we all leave I'm the one driving since Lilly send me the address and I'll be staying in the car until everything is finished. As I'm driving it looks like we in some village it's not too rural though I keep driving we finally make it it's still very dark it's around 4am I can see a big house it's not hard to miss it since it's the only huge house here it has

small houses around it about 10 this place is huge and beautiful.

Dad: are sure we at the right place?

Me: yes

Joe: who exactly are you marry because it seems like she's very rich more than your father even.

I just chuckle and give him a stack of money he will need to open the gate. They all go out and start shouting clan names I just start chatting with my Lilly I miss her she tells me they awake and her father is drinking coffee while watching TV I knew his going to enjoy this but it's cool. They keep going on and on it's now 7am and the sun is shining eventually we see her brothers come to the gate looking like bouncers Joe gives them the money they want more so I give them and they enter I just stay outside. Later I see uncle Joe coming out looking pissed I just roll my window he stands next to me.

Joe: these men are crazy they want 2 million so much money.

I just chuckle I knew Terminator will pull such a stunt I just give him another bag full of money.

Me: the first bag I gave you has 1 million in it this one has another 1 million just give it to them.

His jaw drops.

Joe: Hai... Nkanyezi so much money are you sure?

Me: yes just give them.

Joe: Hai... okay

He takes it and goes back in after a while I hear singing I just smile because I know it means all is done her brother comes to call me I walk in honestly this place is like a palace its beautiful I walk in side I find the men happy except my dad he just looks pale I see Terminator and I wink at him he gives me a middle finger Godfather smacks the back of his head I just chuckle and shake my head and sit later we go sit outside and the food starts coming out I see my Lilly in her traditional attire coming to us with a bowl of water she comes to me first I look at her and smirk she looks sexy and beautiful I wash my hands and she moves on

to the other men when she's done she serves us with her food ever since I got here my dad has not said a word uncle Joe just keeps entertaining everyone with his stories honestly it was a beautiful day we did tell them that they only have this week to prepare because this coming weekend I'm marrying Lilly Terminator was annoyed by me and I don't care.

Godfather: Max you didn't tell me Ngidi is your father.

Me: I thought you knew.

Him: no I only know your brother Michael.

I just shrug my shoulders.

Terminator: Baba how do you know his father.

Godfather: I own a some shares in some of his businesses.

Terminator: oh...okay is he always this quiet.

Godfather: no I'm actually surprised.

Joe: that because he thought your daughter is a poor uneducated person who was not even a virgin.

Both their faces change and they look at my dad who looks like his about to shit himself I just drink my whiskey and stand to go look for my Lilly I bump into one of her sisters and she drags me into some bedroom I find my Lilly sitting on the bed I go join her.

Me: hi

He: hi

Me: how are you?

She shrugs her shoulders I know she is worried about me rushing things. I get up and kneel in front of her she looks down at me I hold both her hands.

Me: you do know that if you don't want us to get married this weekend we can postpone it to whenever you like.

Her: I'm just scared that's it.

Me: it's okay to be scared Lilly but I'm not going anywhere I'm never letting you go I love you. If you

feel like I'm putting pressure on you talk to me remember we a team now.

Her: okay please don't postpone I think it's just sinking in that I'm somebody's wife.

Me: don't over think it it changes nothing between us it's just that now you can boss me around a little and I can have endless pussy.

She giggles and hits my shoulder I get up and lay on the bed and pull her on top of me we just stay in silence. The whole week was very busy for me I've been organizing this wedding I hope Lilly likes it I got help from her siblings and Juice his been here this whole week the rest of the gang is coming on Friday. My father has been a grumpy man ever since the lobola negotiations his been avoiding me and honestly I don't care my current problem is Tumi my brothers wife she's been trying to get my attention and trying to seduce me honestly I'm 5 to popping her head Lilly will kill me if she finds her anywhere close to me. Today is my wedding day I'm very excited I really miss my woman I just cant wait for this day to end I just want her in my

arms our wedding colors are white and yellow I bought her a a big square clean cut diamond ring which is accompanied with a thin diamond wedding bend we will also have a ring exchange ceremony she said she wants to buy me a ring so I don't know what kind of ring she bought for me. All the men are dressed in Zulu attire we sitting in a tent waiting for Lilly and her family to come when suddenly we hear them singing at the gate the men hear and go join them as they have a singing battle. Eventually they let them in and my aunts take Lilly to go change in her traditional Zulu attire I'm waiting with my men we still chilling talking and listening to Juice telling me how he loves the Khumalo twins, I'm disturbed when I hear Lilly's voice sing I know that beautiful voice anywhere it calms my soul I stand up and look around I can see a crowd coming its them but I can't see my Lilly I keep looking and eventually I see her dancing and leading the song I smile with bride truth is Lilly is a pure Zulu girl even though she grew up in modern times but she still knows her roots very well. She looks beautiful in her

white and yellow attire I can see her sisters and cousins are the ones accompanying her I start to walk towards her with my men. Biggie starts to sing and we follow his lead next thing I'm dancing I haven't done this in a while I didn't know I still had it in me the females go crazy eventually I get to her and stab the spire on the grass she then pulls it with one hand the woman start to sing then my beautiful Lilly decide to correct my dancing her small waist moves beautifully with her legs and hands. We just had our ring exchange and signed our marriage certificate she bought me a simple charcoal ring but when I move around you can see small crystals I think its diamonds on it I love it its exactly something I would've went for. Her welcome ceremony went well uncle Joe named her Siphosihle Ngidi she is definitely a beautiful gift. The rest of the night we partied and danced and drank it was nice even my dad and brother were enjoying themselves.

We've been at my home in KZN for two days now and I'm impressed at how she takes very task that my aunts throw at her my wife is not a snob she

still has her long nails but she gets things done perfectly I wake up and Lilly is not next to me as usual I hate this I'm so used to waking up tangled to her I'm sure she is making breakfast for everyone it's like they forget that she's not the only makoti in this house but Lilly told me to stay out of it. Anyway I walk out the shower with a towel wrapped around my waist I find Tumi laying on my bed in her lingerie I swear this one is really testing my patience I was about to say something when Lilly walks in the room she freezes at the door and looks at Tumi who has a stupid smile on her face and she looks at me for a while she finds the answer she was looking for she closes the door and locks it she puts the key in her pocket she comes to me I bend down and kiss her lips.

Her: I came to tell you breakfast is ready.

Me: okay let me get dressed.

Her: what's her problem?

She asks pointing at Tumi who looks very confused she doesn't know she is about to get fucked up.

Me: I don't know when I walked out the shower I found her laying on our bed looking at me your husband like a piece of meat imagine my love.

I say sounding very dramatic Lilly giggles.

Her: can I take care of her?

Me: please I'm 5 to killing her.

I walk to the walk in closet I see Lilly has hung up the clothes I should wear today as I lotion myself I hear slaps and screams it goes on for about 5 minutes then she walks in and takes my belt and walks out this I want to see I quickly wear my shirt and go out I find her working the belt on her her strokes look painful her lingerie is even torn she looks so mad I was about to stop her then she went to the door to unlock she then dragged her out with her hair shame man that was a bit sad. She comes back and she puts my belt around me and takes my hand we go downstairs we settle down and she starts to dish up for me my brother and Tumi are not here. Next thing Michael comes down fuming his looking at Lilly with red eyes.

Michael: you stupid bit....

He didn't finish that sentence I just pulled out my gun and shot his shoulder everyone on the table jumped in fear except Lilly who is just eating her food like nothing is happening.

Me: Michael I'm not your mate I will forget you my little brother I will put a bullet between your eyes don't fuck with me.

Dad: Nkanyezi what is wrong with you.

I ignore him and sit down and start to eat my food my mom goes to attend him everyone lost their appetite I guess.

LILLY

Well after that show in the morning we now sitting in the dining table because uncle Joe called a meeting about it I'm sitting across Tumi who has red marks on her face and probably all over her body I'm just looking at her and she's looking everywhere but me as for Michael he has his red eyes on me mxm pussy.

Uncle Joe: Nkanyezi please tell me why did you shoot your brother like that.

Max: because he wanted to disrespect my wife.

Michael: look at what your stupid wife did to my wife!

I feel Max getting angry and my heart rate is slowly increasing I put my hand on his thigh.

Uncle Joe: Hai Michael that is no way to talk to your brother or about his wife or do you want to die?

He goes silent.

Uncle Joe: good now tell me Siphosihle tell me what happened between you and Tumi.

Me: with all due respect Uncle Joe can we please let Tumi explain herself.

Uncle Joe: Tumi we are listening.

Tumi starts to move uncomfortably flinching and she starts to cry.

Uncle Joe: Tumi I do not have all day.

Michael: she hit her look at my wife she has these marks all over her body.

Me: did she tell you why I hit her?

Michael: you not even denying it!

Why is he shouting?

Me: and why would I deny it?

Max Dad: just tell us what happened man!

He bangs the table.

Me: Tumi are going to talk or should I repeat it again?

She shakes her head fast.

Tumi: I was in their room this morning.

Michael looks at her waiting for her to continue.

Max: and why were you in our room?

Tum: uhmmm... I I... I...

Uncle Joe: you what man!

Max: she was there half naked on my bed trying to seduce me and Lilly walked in so you can use your imagination of what happened.

Michael: you lying she would never do that!

Uncle Joe: Tumi is Max right?

She slowly nods her head.

Max dad: Jesus Tumi. Sphesihle I'm sure there was a better way to deal with than hit her like this.

Me: if it was up to me I would have done far worse this is nothing.

Max dad: and you Nkanyezi you let your wife act like a straat mate here?.

Max: don't ever call her that I'm warning you. If I didn't let Lilly deal with her I would have killed her without thinking twice you should actually thank her.

Uncle Joe: Lilly you did well my daughter this is how you deal with girls who do not know how to behave.

Michael has been looking at Tumi with so much disgust.

Max dad: Joe why would you even say something like this?

Uncle Joe: this is how you deal with a hoe believe me she doesn't understand talking from now on she will behave accordingly you'll see.

Eventually the meeting ended. We are now back in Johannesburg and nothing has changed it's just I have a huge ring on my finger and its heavy and Max said I should never take it off and honestly I have no intentions of taking it off I love that I belong to him and how people look at my hand I've been going to school and running my club I just check on the Numbers company and everything is also good. It's now the first week of June and I've been busy with my exams I told Max about the Numbers company his not exactly thrilled about me working close with Amu but he'll live. Today the guard is driving me Max has been working too much for my liking he did tell me that his trying to fix a problem with the Hawks since I killed Bongs they have been giving him a problem I want to help him but it's best I wait for him to ask me because I know how his ego can get. I'm heading to juicys place there is some documents I have to take from him I'm helping him with his business I'm just checking that his doing it correctly I get to his house he lives in Soweto his really a kasi guy I go knock and I wait for a while the door opens my

eyes meet Ulwazi in his t shirt I just raise my eyebrow looking at her. I'm honestly not going to ask anything she let's me in I find Juicy with his arms around a half naked Nolwazi okay now I'm super confused I just keep moving my eyes amongst them. They both have their alien blue eyes on me as if I'm going to say something we stare at each other until juicy decides to get what I came for I just sit there and looking at these two daddy is so going to kill them I'm sure he knows that they here. Eventually Juicy gives me the documents as I was about to leave.

Juicy: I'm taking you out for dinner look fancy.

Me: uhmmm... I'll be ready by 7PM

Juicy: sharp sharp Bozza

He hugs me and I walk out what are my alien sisters doing with Juicy?? I hope he tells me what is really going on because as far as I know those two are in Cape town at school so I'm ready for gossip. When I get home Max is not there I immediately prepare something to eat for him since I will be out with Juicy for dinner then I start

going through his paper work so far his doing well I don't know why he wants me to check it his a fast learner his done everything exactly how I taught him. It's now 5PM I go prepare myself when I'm done with hygiene process I decide to wear a white open back dress it's very tight it's over my knees and has a low v line cut on my boobs they look sexy I tie my hair in a high ponytail and put on my maroon lipstick Max walks in and freeze on the door looking at me with his jaw on the floor I put on my mascara he comes to stand behind me looking at me through the mirror.

Him: is there a date night I forgot about?

Me: no

I say as I walk away a take my nude pointy red bottom heels his busy following me around I just give him the shoes and sit on the bed lift my feet and wait for him to put them on.

Him: so where are you going?

Me: out for dinner.

Him: looking like that??

Me: is there something wrong with how I look?

Him: no let me go freshen up and we can go.

Me: who said you coming with me?

He looks at me like I just insulted him.

Him: Lilly don't test me you not leaving this house alone looking this beautiful what do think other men will do? Unless you want me to go on a killing spree.

Me: will you just calm down your titts I'm just going out with Juicy.

Him: and you dressed like that for Juicy ?

Me: what is wrong with my dress?

Him: its sexy I want to tear it and fuck you on the wall.

I feel my clit twitch.

Me: why do you have to make everything sexual?

Him: have you seen yourself?

Me: will you just put on my shoes Juicy will be here anytime.

Him: why can't I tag along?

Me: because I want to get some gossip.

Him: mxm I always told juice his gay.

He says putting on my shoes when his done he pulls up into his arms I feel all sorts of butterflies all over my body.

Me: I love you Mr. Ngidi.

Him: I love you more Mrs. Ngidi.

Eventually Juicy arrives to come pick me up his dressed in a nice suit I'm impressed.

Max: juice if anything happens to her I will kill you.

Juicy: I know.

Max: where are you even going? You can not be taking my wife out when are getting a boyfriend Juice?

Me: Juicy can we please just go.

I go kiss Max and hook my arm on Juicy and we walk out. We arrive at this fancy restaurant it's very beautiful and has this soft atmosphere going on I think am going to eat here more often they

show us our table we settle down and order our food he ordered a bottle of wine this will be the first time I see him drink wine he usually drinks beer and that's it we busy having a nice conversation and laughing.

Me: so you going to tell me what's going on with you and my sisters?

Him: I love them.

He looks at me with a serious face I look into his eyes and he really means it.

Me: both of them?

Him: yes I know it's weird and shit but I love them both at first I thought I was just being crazy or maybe it was infatuation but as time went on I grew fond of them I don't know how it happened and when it happened but before I knew it I was dating both of them.

Me: when did this even start yall are so sneaky.

Him: it started on your birthday party at the club when you were busy juggling everything you

didn't really pay attention to your surroundings and that was when I grew close to them.

Me: have ever tried to choose one maybe or something?

Him: I can't choose one of them I know it sounds selfish but truth is I can never separate them they nothing without each other and you know this they literally one person stuck in two bodies they can not function without each other and their bond is beautiful and sometimes very weird but I love them just as they are I don't want to break their bond by separating them it will only do more harm than anything and they both in love with me just as much as I love them I actually want to marry them soon.

I feel my tears coming out I know what he means Ulwazi and Nolwazi are one person yes they maybe have their differences here and there but they our Khumalo twins even though they sextuplets but we've always seen them as twins I'm just happy that they found someone who really understands them a part of me has always been

worried they might have a huge problem if one of them finds love but if they both found it in Juicy who loves and wants them both without even trying to change them it just makes me so happy.

Him: would you stop crying or do you want Max to come kill me?

Me: I'm sorry man I'm just happy for you and my sisters.

Him: thank you I actually thought you were going to have a problem with me being with both of them.

Me: no not at all I understand your relationship and I know that you can never separate them they do everything together and I find it weird too sometimes.

Ulwazi and Nolwazi are weird as fuck because they do too many things together they both studying medicine they both want to be cardiologist and since they don't have friends their schedules are the same they even bath together their

relationship is beautiful but I don't think I want someone in my face 24/7.

Him: tell me about it I still don't understand how they do so many things together but I must say dating both of them is fun.

Me: so do yall have like threesomes?

Him: I'm not going to answer that.

Me: oh...come on Juicy don't do this to me.

Him: no I'm not telling you my sex life with my wives.

Me: please I will not ask you anything after this.

He looks at me.

Him: okay fine we do have threesomes sometimes.

I scream a little and people look at me I cover my mouth.

Me: so you really want to marry them?

Him: yea I was just waiting for your approval and now I'm going to send a letter to your dad please put in a nice word for me your father is scary.

Me: you do realize I'm their little sister you do not need my approval for being with them they both adults they know what they doing, and when it comes to my father good luck I suggest you get some tips from Max but if you get my mom on your side then you safe.

Him: you may be their little sister but to me you Bozzayam and you know how much respect I have for you.

Me: uhmmm... by the way my mom is allergic to flowers so do not even think of buying her such.

We continue to have our dinner and it was very nice until Max decided to show up saying he wants me back home because he cant sleep without me this one is just dramatic.

Its Saturday morning and Max looks like a caveman with his hair and beard all grown out ever since Max was on the wheelchair I had to learn how to cut and groom his hair ever since then he doesn't go the salon I cut his hair and I'm very good at it. His sitting on the toilet seat and im standing between his legs wearing just his shirt im

busy cutting his hair and his busy running his hands on my thighs im just ignoring him I know his always horny self wants some.

Me: if you carry on doing what you doing I will make you bold.

Him: no you wont just concentrate and don't mind me.

I look down on him he has his eyes closed I put the clippers on the basin and take his shaving kit I start to prepare it, I take the hot towel and cover his bottom face with it after a few seconds I remove it and start to shave him gently I don't want to accidentally cut him or cause him to have razor bumps but his not helping because now his playing with my clit and it's so nice I carry on shaving his neck and I feel his finger enter me I stop and close my eyes.

Him: you stop shaving me I'll also stop.

Me: Max...

Him: continue Lilly.

Why is Max like this? I continue to shave him very slowly with him fingering me I feel my build up I stop and he pulls out his fingers.

Me: Max please...

I say close to crying.

Him: I told you if you stop I stop.

Me: but that's not fair Max.

Him: Lilly finish shaving me.

All this time his eyes are closed I start to shave him again and he starts with his fingers I try concentrating on the shaving eventually I finish as soon as I'm done wiping him he grabs me and puts me on top of him he takes off my shirt and directs his dick inside me I close my eyes as my tears run down I swear his dick is heaven sent I can't even explain what I'm feeling all I know is I feel all sorts of pleasure he groans and takes my boob in his mouth he holds my ass tightly and starts to move me and I just follow his lead I throw my head back as I feel my blood rush and more tears coming out we make love until I squirt on him as he moves me

faster he then comes calling out my name I just relax in his arms he carries me into the shower and opens the water I jump as the cold water hits my back he giggles.

Him: I'm sorry just give it a moment.

The water gets warm all this time his dick is still inside me and my legs are wrapped around his waist he stands under the water I start to kiss him gently and slowly I feel him jerk inside and I deepened the kiss with my tongue in the mix he moves his hands from my waist to under my ass my legs hang on his arms I look down and see his long dick half in he starts to move me up and down his dick is poking me in a painful way.

Me: it's hurting me.

He moves to the wall and pins me there the cold tile makes me arch my back he holds my hands above my head and his hand goes around my waist tightly. He starts to thrust in softly but I want more.

Him: you good?

He asks looking into my eyes.

Me: move faster please.

He does as I say but I still want more I want the pain and the pleasure.

Me: put it all in Max.

I goes deeper and the pain shoots up I scream and he stops.

Me: please don't stop.

Him: you sure.

Me: Max just fuck me!.

He doesn't hesitate he just starts to pump me I keep moaning and screaming he let's go of my hands and holds me tightly around my waist I can't breath properly but I don't care my hands drop on his broad shoulders same as my head as I feel my build up I bite him as I my orgasm hits me hard he just carries on fucking me faster until he slams into me groaning out my name. After that we shower and we spend the day lazing around and fucking like rabbits in 4 months time I'm going to remove my implant im sure he will have fixed his problem

with the Hawks we did talk about having kids and everything and I want to surprise him with a pregnancy yes I may be very young to be a mother but I'm done with school and Max has is turning 30 this year I don't want him to have his first child at an old age I know if I mention that I'm not ready to have kids he will wait just to make me happy I think it's time I make him happy as much as he makes me happy.

It's now the middle of June I just finished my exams first week of July I'll be starting my internship with Numbers I'm so excited. I went shopping with Ulwazi and Nolwazi they said I need a new wardrobe for work since I have to wear formal clothes I bought a lot of new lingerie since Max is always tearing them I know soon I'll have to buy again when I complained about how he tears my very expensive underwear he went on and bought me a lingerie shop well he bought me shares there and soon me and my sisters will be modeling for the new range it's called Lexi Lace its beautiful and cater for all sizes and it has every style its really nice the lady is the sweetest her

name is Alex all she needs is a proper marketing team and she will be making proper money all in all I love her work all I'm bringing on the table is capital and my business skills she has the designs and runs the day to day business I own 48% shares. We walk in and find the whole gang in the lounge looking tense I go put the bags in my room and go back to them Max looks at me I look back at him something is wrong.

Biggy: Max I tried everything nothing is working.

Max: don't tell me nonsense Biggy do you know what's at stake? Everyone sitting here will go to jail for a very long time so don't piss me off.

Biggy sighs he starts typing on his PC I can see he looks stressed I go stand behind him his trying to crack some codes on this other paper he has next to him his failing at every attempt I look back at Max I want to try and help them but his on his gang mode I don't want him to bite my head off if I offer my help. He looks at me for a while eventually he nods his head he just gave me the go ahead to try and fix it I wink at him he just shakes his head

trying to hide his smile he can never say no to me and he knows it.

Me: Biggy let me try.

Biggy: thank you so much take.

He hands me his PC and the papers I look at the papers and they just full of numbers and alphabets this looks really hard I start typing on and on and on but nothing is working I've been looking at this PC for 4 hours now everyone is sitting silently waiting for me I just close the PC and look up at Max I feel like crying this is frustrating me why can't I fix it? I don't want him to go to jail I don't know what's in there but judging from how his been it must be very serious. Max stands up and come to sit on the coffee table in front me he locks me in and leans forward without taking his eyes off mine.

Him: you overthinking that is why you frustrated.

I just look at him.

Him: clear your head of everything you saw on those papers and PC let's start again.

I close my eyes and do as he says everyone is extremely quiet and looking at us. I open my eyes they land on my beautiful man this man is sexy as fuck my eyes move down to his lips and I just imagine him eating me up I feel my clit twitch and I press my thighs together as my breathing changes. He smirks at me.

Him: Lilly you losing focus.

I just bite my lower lip as I see his move. He snaps his fingers on my face and I blink a couple of times I find the gang looking at me amused and my sisters ready to bust out laughing I look back at him blushing he brings my chin up and gives me a soft kiss he then hands me the papers I take them and look at them for a while. I'm missing something here then I remember Owami once said something about time and space and shadows moving I look at the papers longer searching in my memory for that conversation. I close my eyes and I smell her perfume first then I see her beautiful face "Owami: Lilly when you hack something always look at the pattern there's always a pattern

all you have to do is figure out where the pattern breaks and starts again the space that happens between the patterns is where the universe gives you time to hack it, it has its shifts that's what I call the shadows they are everywhere all you have to do is wait for the shift to happen and it opens a shadow the trick is to be very fast when this happens because the shadows only open for a short while if its open for more than 10 seconds you can hack it well even 5 seconds but you must be really good if that's the case but if it's less then you can never hack it that's why my shadows are only open for 2 seconds." I pull out and shake my head a little Max is now looking at me with worry.

Me: can I please have a pencil.

Juicy gives me I take the papers and look at them I study them for about an hour Max has not moved ever since his been in front of me. Eventually I see the Pattern I start making notes on it and I see when it breaks and starts again I see the shadows open for 17 seconds the patterns keep changing so far there are three patterns at least they all have

17 seconds shadows. In 2 hours I'm done with studying the patterns I open the PC and start typing in the patterns I wait for the shadows to happen the first one opens and I hack it with no problem I move from pattern to pattern after 4 hours I'm in everything shows on my PC everything is here literally everything about every drug lord long list of names and what they do even my parents and grandfather is here and it tells in detail who does what and how my eyes just pop where does Max get this? If this got on the wrong hands this person would have so much power. I look at Max he looks at me and he knows I'm in.

Max: what's in it?

Everyone is now looking at me waiting.

Me: everything.

Max: everything?

Me: yes, every gang, every king pin, murderers you name them and what they do it's all here.

Everyone's eyes pop because they know what this can do.

Max: delete it and everything that is there make sure no one can retrieve it and Lilly make sure that where it was copied from or if there is a trace that it was copied disappears and no one will ever find it.

I nod my head and start working on it I delete everything lucky this is the original it was never copied or anything like that I make sure that whoever tries to get something similar to this just catches a virus that just ruins everything connected to them. When im done everyone is in a better mood now they even braaiing I'm hungry I decide to take a quick shower that was so tense I need to blow some steam. I just finished getting dressed Max walks in and sits on the bed looking at me.

Max: thank you.

Me: you welcome.

Max: you don't understand Lilly you've saved so many people from the underworld including me.

Me: and I would do it again just for you plus my parents and grandfather were there too I can never let something hurt the ones I love. Where do you even get it?

Max: Bongs created it looks like his been collecting information on a lot of people and he had to give that to the hawks that's what has been keeping me because once we found out he created something like this we've been looking for it and eventually we found it before the Hawks it's just we didn't know what exactly was there.

Me: now you see why I never liked Bongs?.

He sighs.

Max: it's just I'm disappointed we come very far why would he do this now I'm struggling to trust anyone I can not even ask anyone to be my right hand man even though Juice stepped up but I still have some doubts lingering because of Bongs. How can I work with a team I can not trust Lilly? Right now you the only person I trust with my everything.

Me: don't punish them for Bongs doing Max that's not fair just be more careful and vigilant but let them grow don't paint them with the same brush as Bongs. Let's start with Juicy and everyone and everything will fall into place.

He just snuggles onto me I hate what Bongs has done to my man he should be grateful I stabbed him if only he was still alive I would make him feel the heat. We cuddle until my stomach grumbles I did say I'm hungry we finally go down and join everyone Ulwazi and Nolwazi look like sister wives around Juicy it's cute I like their relationship.

Its Monday morning and I'm looking at myself on the mirror I'm wearing a navy blue pencil dress that hugs my body I've been exercising with Max and he reminds me so much of my dad the way he pushes me and makes sure I sweat it's just like him my six pack looks sexy as ever my ass shape looks hot because its naturally big and now that it looks toned I just love it. I'm wearing this dress with white pointy heels they make my legs look nice

they remind me of how my mom loves seeing me in heels. My hair is in a neat bun makes my face look like I just had a up lift. I put on a dark purple lipstick it's close to black or maroon. I walk out and find Max in the kitchen waiting for me he just looks at me blankly I turn for him to see me and he still has his blank face well his been mad that I'll working with Amu he really hates him I go put my arms around his neck Gosh his still so tall even though I'm in these high heels I peck his lips.

Me: stop being grumpy you do know I'm Mrs. Ngidi right so no one can touch this.

His still looking me his really not budging it's time I pull out my emotional blackmail. I let him go and take off my shoes I turn around.

Me: please unzip me.

Him: Lilly we going to be late please stop what you doing so we can go.

Me: I'm no longer going.

I say sounding sad.

Him: what? Why?

Me: because you don't like it and I don't like seeing you all grumpy and moody with me clearly you don't want me working there.

He turns me around and looks at me worried.

Him: no Lilly I'm just jealous that you will be working with your ex and you walking around looking beautiful I know his going to want you back but that doesn't mean you shouldn't work there just because I'm in my feelings.

Me: so you okay with me working there?

Him: no I'm not but that's no problem because I will kill him if he tries anything funny. Now let me put back your shoes.

He picks me up and puts me on the counter he puts on my shoes and we leave I'm already late but I don't care I want him to see me properly. Max is my self appointed driver we get to the building its huge its actually the first time I come here before I did everything online so there was a never a need to come here.

Max: enjoy your day okay.

I nod my head I pack his lips and he hugs me tightly.

Me: I love you.

Him: I love you more.

He kisses my forehead and looks at me as I walk in everyone keeps turning their head with me my loud heels don't help the situation I get to the receptionist she's just looking at me blankly.

Me: Good morning I'm here for the internship.

She pulls a face I raise my eyebrow.

Her: 8th floor.

I turn and look for stairs I see them and go up taking my time I'm wearing very expensive heels so I'm not about to run up these stairs and I don't want to be sweaty eventually I make it on 8th floor I walk and I ask a lady to show me where to go she just points at a door I walk towards it I open it and everyone looks at me they sitting around a long table one side it's the students opposite them its Amu a lady and two guys everyone is silent Amus eyes look like they about to pop out.

Me: Good morning I'm sorry I'm late I got lost.

The lady just looks at me sizing me up the two guys looking at me with lust.

1 guy: it's okay please sit.

Amu: clears throat... uhmmm may I please be excused there is something... uhmm.. yea take care of this.

All this time his eyes have not left mine he stands quickly and leaves I move my eyes to these three and the lady clearly has a problem with me I don't give a fuck the two guys look at each other and back at me. I just sit back and get comfortable .

1 Guy: we've already introduce ourselves and what is your name?

Me: I'm Nthombenhle Lilly Siphosihle Ngidi I'm a third year student in Business Science.

I pull out my school papers which state which departments I have to go to I only have to shadow the COO and CEO.

1 guy: oh... I know you will me shadowing me and the CEO you actually the only business Science

student here, looks like you will be stuck with me for the next three months. By the way I'm Kagiso Moloji the COO.

Me: nice to meet you.

All this time the lady has a frown on her face after that introduction we are shown around the building and different departments from there we go to HR and sign all the necessary papers we then placed accordingly I'm obviously working with Kagiso who works on 15th floor with the CEO and all the executives. The day was okay people made friends and everything at lunch I was chilling alone well I didn't mind I'm used to it anyway I just called Max and we spoke until my lunch time was over nothing productive happened I haven't seen Amu since morning later Max came to fetch me and I told him about my day his not happy that I have to use the stairs everyday 15th floor is really far but it's okay if I didn't hit the gym on a regular I would be complaining I'm just more worried about my heels and I'm not a person who changes shoes if I wear heels then its heels the whole day I

find very unattractive when a woman changes into flats just because she is tired of wearing heels rather not wear them at all.

AMUKELANI

I swear my whole world came to a stand still when she walked in she looks more beautiful and mature now I'm still madly in love with her and I still have plans of making her my second wife I know she is dating someone because she does post him on her Instagram it's just she hides his face well I'm not afraid of a little competition a girl never forgets her first right I'm her first everything I'm sure she still feels something for me I mean she was looking at me I think we had a moment. Things have changed a lot since she left me I did go to her apartment and look for her weeks later but she had moved out someone else was living there my taxis got bunt all of them and I became bankrupt to a point where I had to sell my company at least after that the CEO position opened and I applied for it I was given the position and it pays well but now the only thing I have to

my name is my house and cars. My relationship Bongiwe is okay I guess she's just not Lilly I have a son with her she is your typical house wife she became friends with Palesa and now she looks like a slay queen our fights are normally caused by Lilly since I still have her pictures and some of her things I refuse to get rid of them she is the love of my life and I still want her back. Bongiwe is just a nag most times if she's not spending my money she is complaining about something she's just not ambitious I tried to get her back to school or something but she's not interested it's just a turn off I want a woman who can make her own money and is ambitious just like Lilly but I guess they don't make them like her. Me and Palesa have our sex thing going on the side I did tell her that Bongiwe can never find out and she is cool with it I just don't know how they became friends so when ever I have a fight with Bongiwe I just book a room and call Palesa I do give her some money at least. Ever since I walked out the boardroom I've locked myself in my office and canceled all my appointments I'm sitting here thinking about Lilly

I'm so happy that I'll be working closely with her this is my chance to make things right and bring her back into my life I'm so happy and excited.

It's been two days since Lilly has started work here she has a table set up in Kagiso's office and right now I'm going there to see her I don't even know what I'm going to say when I get there I hope I don't freeze like the last time. I walk there and I bump into Mamello she is head of HR and she is in charge of all our interns or trainees she was present at the meeting she has always had a thing for me well I once fucked her before and ever since then she acts funny around me.

Her: hey Amu how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks I'm actually in a hurry to Kagiso there are some papers I need from him.

Her face changes into a frown I just walk away when I get there they are both silently working on their papers Kagiso looks up at me. I look at Lilly today she has her hair down she looks very beautiful she's just concentrating on her papers

she's not even looking at me I'm pulled back by Kagiso talking.

Him: Boss I'm nearly done with the report I know you looking for it I'll bring them just after lunch.

I even forgot about that report.

Me: oh... yeah yeah okay, how is she settling in?

She's still not acknowledging me.

Him: well it's been two days I'm just showing her the ropes now and what I basically do here I must say she is a fast learner.

Me: yea I'm sure she is.

She looks at me with her eyebrow raised her eyes look more intimidating than before I swallow my spit.

Me: let me get going I'll b waiting for that report.

I walk out quickly fuck this might be harder than I thought but it's no problem I walk into my office and just bury myself into work time flies and I hear my door opening I look up its Bongwiwe with lunch yes I'm hungry but I don't want to see her I was

hoping to go have lunch with kagiso so I can see Lilly.

Bongiwe: hello hubby I thought I should bring you lunch today I hope you hungry.

Me: yeah sure.

I say standing up to go sit on the couch. She comes and gives me the food I start eating thinking about Lilly and she's just talking and talking. She snaps her fingers on my face.

Bongiwe: Amu am I talking to myself?

Me: uhmm... no no I'm listening.

Bongiwe: what's wrong you've been distracted since you came home on Monday.

Me: it's just work don't worry about it.

We were interrupted by a knock thank God.

Me: come in!

And here walks in my wife looking ever so classy in her black dress that hugs her sexy body beautifully. Her eyes travel to Bongiwe then back at me.

Lilly: hey I didn't know you had company.

Me: no no its okay.

Bongiwe: you actually disturbing us.

Lilly just gives her one look. I feel my spine shiver.

Me: it's okay Lilly my lunch time is finished she's leaving anyway, how can I help you.

Lilly: I just came to drop off the report you asked from kagiso.

She says handing it to me when I take it I see a huge ring on her finger I hope it's not what I think it is. I stare at it and she turns and walks away her body just looks even more sexy I'm drooling at her walking out slowly and those heels look beautiful on her.

Bongiwe: are you Kidding me Amu??

I snap out of it and look at her.

Bongiwe: why would you even hire her? Are you cheating on me with her again? Is it not enough that you bought her into my house the last time?!

She shouts at me I just look at her.

Me: Bongiwe I have to get back to work now as I said my lunch time is over please leave.

Bongiwe: Don't you dare Amu!...

I interrupt her.

Me: hai ...hai ...hai Bongiwe I'm at work! We will have this conversation at home now leave man!

I shout at her and she jumps in fear she grabs her bag and leaves. I sigh out and brush my head I'm never going to hear the end of it, I take the report and start working but my mind keeps drifting to Lilly and that huge ring.

Its been two weeks and things have been hard very hard Lilly doesn't give me the time of day even when I try to be friendly she just brushes me off I cant even apologize for what happened between us. I'm currently in my office with Bongiwe she has become a regular ever since she found that Lilly works here I'm walking her out when we see Lilly walking past the elevator holding a coffee mug I think she's from the kitchen she's reading the papers she has on her other she's

dressed in a red jumpsuit and black heels she's beautiful . Next thing Bongiwe walks fast towards her she stands right in front of her.

Bongiwe: who the fuck do you think you are huh?!

She screams at her Lilly looks at her with her eyebrow raised I just get lost looking at this beautiful person Bongiwe continues shouting and screaming at her Lilly is just looking at her unbothered while making her funny faces and starts sipping her coffee. Thing about Lilly is that when you scream and shout at her she just zones out and looks at you once you done she will say "huh?" just know she heard nothing. Bongiwe looks at me well I didn't hear what she has been screaming about and that pissed her off really bad next thing she pushes Lilly so hard I see that coffee fly to her chest as she falls back she falls into the elevator and the doors close immediately fuck this can not happen I start pressing the button furiously I see the elevator move down and it stops I think its malfunctioning it shows a red sign that

its stuck shit shit. I turn to Bongiwe who gets scared and looks away from me.

Me: do you realize the shit you just did Bongiwe?!
What the fuck is your problem?!

I scream at her as she jumps in fear. Kagiso walks out the office.

Kagiso: what's going on? What's with the shouting?

Me: she pushed Lilly into the elevator.

I say angrily.

Kagiso: I still don't understand what is wrong.

Me: she is claustrophobic she can't be in there.!

Kagiso: oh...fuck that's why she's always using the stairs?

I just look at him and pull out my phone to call the maintenance guys and the ambulance I run down to reception to wait for them they better be fast.

MAX

I'm in my office working when I suddenly feel chest pains my phone starts to beep I look at it and

its Lilly's tracker beeping yellow meaning something is wrong with her physically I jump of my chair and grab my car keys it shows she's at work I swear if someone did something to her a few people are going to die. Her mother let me in on how their trackers work I also got one its actually very genius. I'm driving like crazy and my chest really hurts I know its Lilly if I feel like this I'm sure she feels worse I arrive there in 5 minutes I hurry into the building when I get to the reception I see people busy at the elevator and some paramedics when the receptionist sees me she gasps and takes a step back I'm pretty sure my face doesn't look anywhere close to friendly.

Me: I'm looking for Nthombenhle Lilly Ngidi she's a intern here.

She stutters which pisses me even more I bang her table and she screams jumping.

Me: where the fuck is she!

Everyone looks at me a man dark a little shorter than me.

Him: sir how can I help you?

Me: I'm looking for Lilly she's an intern here.

Him: uhmm... she's stuck in the elevator.

I close my eyes how the fuck did she even get into an elevator when she knows she's claustrophobic. I turn and walk towards the elevator the guys have opened the floor working on whatever.

Me: can someone open these doors.

Guy: sir we can not do that.

I was about to say something when I'm interrupted by my phone it's her mother:

Me: hello

Her: Max what's going with my baby?

Me: she got stuck in the elevator at work I'm working on getting her out now.

Her: Max get her out fast please.

Me: yea I'll call you back.

I hang up and grab one of their metal equipment they tried to stop me I just gave them one look and

they just let me be I put it between the doors and started to open it slowly everyone is now gathered looking at me once the doors are open I see the elevator is stuck just above us I can see her shoes I think she passed out. I jump up and start to pull the elevator down I only seen this in movies and it looks easy but this shit is hard and needs a lot of man power if I didn't lift weights I don't think I would be able to pull it down like this once its halfway down I jump in and my Lilly is just laying on the floor her chest and neck look red and wet I think coffee spilled on her I can smell it I carry her and hand her over to the paramedics I just feel numb she has to be okay. I jump out the elevator to follow the paramedics I pass a man shouting at a lady they both look at me as I pass them I take out my phone and call Biggy to get the footage of what actually happened here because nothing makes sense I jump into the ambulance with Lilly and they busy working on her eventually we make it to the hospital and the doctors take her. I sit on the bench and text her mother just to update her next thing the guy who was shouting at the lady

and the one who told me about Lilly walk in I just look at them.

1guy: hey I'm Kagiso I work closely with Lilly and this is Amu the CEO.

He says pointing at the guy who was shouting at some lady so this is the fucker who once hurt my Lilly I look at him for a while and I get interrupted by my phone Biggy has send me a footage I look at it immediately and I feel my blood boil so this one and his stupid wife did this to my Lilly. I look at him and his scared ready to pee his pants.

Me: so your stupid wife pushed my Lilly into the elevator.

I say calmly.

Him: it was a mistake.

Me: I don't think so.

The doctor walks towards us his the doctor who fixed me when I was shot his more like a family doctor now. Amu stands up I look at him and he sits back down.

Me: how is she?

Doctor: she had a mild heart attack whatever triggered her like that is really not good for her. Her blood pressure is over the roof I'm shocked she didn't even have a stroke it was really a close call so I'm keeping her for a week just to monitor her. I also saw she got burned by coffee luckily it's not a third degree burn so she will be okay with just an ointment to ease the pain and get rid of the mark on her chest.

Me: thank you doctor can I see her.

Doctor: yeah sure but she is heavily sedated I'm sure she will be up tomorrow.

I nod my head and walk to her ward I find her sleeping peacefully looking ever so beautiful but I hate seeing her here I don't know how she survived months looking at me laying in a hospital bed but I don't think I can do that she needs to be fine and come home and my chest pains will stop. I decide that I'm joining her in bed if we fall we fall its not my problem.

I'm woken up by someone busy touching my face and squeezing me I open my eyes and find my

beautiful Lilly and her tiny hands busy she smiles at me I smile back I'm so happy to see her.

Me: why are you not sleeping?

She giggles hiding her face on my chest I feel a tingling sensation in my stomach and I chuckle.

Me: you never want to see me in peace even when you in a hospital bed.

Her: I thought I died.

Me: and leave me with who?

Her: tumi

She says giggling.

Me: do you want me to fuck you on this bed?

Her: and scare the nurses with your big dick I don't think so.

Me: what do you know about big dicks because you only know two and the other one doesn't count because I don't think you even saw it.

Her: I watch porn.

Me: haaaa.... Lilly

She busts out laughing at me we chill and talk about nonsense until the doctor comes to check on her everything seems fine so I go home to shower and change she will be discharged in two days so I pack some clothes and toiletries for her.

LILLY

Being at the hospital is very nice actually this is the only time I get to rest properly and let people do everything for me it's so relaxing but I hate their tasteless food. Last night I asked the doctor to remove my implant and cleanse my womb which increases fertility I asked him not mention it to Max and he had no problem about it he also ran some tests to make sure I'm healthy to carry a baby and I'm good I'm so excited hey. Today I'm about to get discharged Max is apparently helping me pack but he's just decorating honestly, as I'm busy Amu walks in with a bunch of flowers well somebody is applying for a death certificate I look over at Max he has a cute frown on his face.

Amu: uhmm... hi

Me: hello

Amu: I didn't know you being discharged I brought you these.

He says handing me the flowers Max quickly grabs them and throws them out the window Gosh the way I want to laugh at him his being so dramatic I see Hlehle laughing when did she even get here . I just look at Max and he stands right next to me and puts his arm around my waist I look back at Amu and he looks like his about to bust out crying next thing Nobuhle is next to Amu looking at him.

Hlehle: is he about to cry?

I really need to laugh. I clear my throat and look up at Max who is looking down at me he drops his head and kisses me I kiss him back and pull out.

Hlehle: show off.

I ignore her this is not the time to entertain her.

Amu: so you really moved on?

He asks in a shaky voice.

Hlehle: heee.. madoda we have sis Matilda ready to cry here.

She says clapping her hands I just busts out laughing I really couldn't hold it in any longer I just can't Hlehle joins me and we continue laughing when I'm done I look back at Max who has a blank look then Amu just walks out furiously Hlehle disappears this one just came here to cause problems.

Max: I'm not even going to ask anything let's finish packing and go home please I'm horny.

I just look at him and he goes sits down and looks at me with a serious face you know sometimes I really think something is wrong with Max his brains malfunction or something it's like he loses a fuse or maybe it's already lose I really don't know.

Max: stop looking at me with your weird eyes and making those faces.

Me: are you okay?

Max: I'm not fine I just told you to finish up I'm horny but you have your weird eyes on me. Do you

want me to fuck you here maybe? I'll be quick I promise.

He says standing up.

Me: Hai ...Max I'm nearly done give me 5 minutes.

You see what I'm talking about the fuse is loose right now. I've been home now for a week the doctor gave me days off and I'm very grateful I'm not ready to face the embarrassment of passing out in the elevator because of the boss's wife. I'm currently cooking in the kitchen with Hlehle sitting on the counter talking nonsense. It's around 6pm I know Max is going to walk in anytime from work.

Hlehle: Lilly when exactly are you telling him about me?

Me: how about never?

Hlehle: why not his your husband and he has seen you talk to me a few times well not really he just thinks you talk to yourself.

Me: please tell me you joking.

Hlehle: I'm not joking his even standing behind you right now.

Me: mxm and you think I would fall for that?

Hlehle: uhmhhh...

Then she starts swinging her legs on the counter I turn slowly and find my beautiful husband standing by the door frame with his arms folded. I can't read his face so I blink a couple of times.

Him: hi.

Me: hi

Him: who were you talking too?

Huh?

Me: uhhh... eh... yho

I look back at Hlehle and she's just looking back at me I look back at Max he walks towards the counter and leans on it looking at me.

Him: Lilly I'm waiting.

Me: I was talking to myself.

Him: we lie to each other now?

Gosh how do I explain this to him his going to freak maybe I don't know. People don't do well with ghosts.

Me: okay sorry. I was talking to Nobuhle my twin.

Him: I didn't know you have a twin where is she?

Me: she's dead.

He looks at me.

Him: I don't understand.

Me: long story cut short my mom miscarried her but for over year or so I've been able to see her ghost and talk to her like when you walked in.

Him: tell me you joking please.

I just look at him then back at Hlehle she stands up and walks to him she starts to brush his arms I see him shiver.

Me: she's actually next to you touching you.

He jumped immediately.

Him: Lilly I'm not doing this shit we leaving!

He runs up the bedroom I look at Hlehle and she just shrugs her shoulders. I run up and find him packing our clothes more like throwing them in the bag I walk to him.

Me: Max please stop!

Him: No Lilly you want us to live in a haunted house are you crazy?

Me: the house is not haunted Max.

Him: maybe you possessed I think I should take you to church.

Gosh I've never seen Max so freaked out his busy walking fast with his long legs throwing clothes everywhere. I go and grab both his arms he stops and looks down at me.

Me: Max no one is possessed or haunted please calm down and let me explain.

He calms down a little next thing Hlehle decides to make a grand entrance the room gets windy and cold I see her standing there giggling. Max jumps shaking

Me: would you just stop it Nobuhle man!

Him: look Lilly I'm not stay for this shit okay next thing doors will be slamming and things flying bye bye.

This one has seen too many horror movies. He tries to walk out I run and close the door and lock it I throw the key outside the window.

Him: what the fuck is wrong with you Lilly do you want us to die in here?!

Me: would you stop shouting and listen for a moment!

He looks at me breathing heavy Hlehle is sitting on the bed looking at us.

Me: okay now can we sit and talk? Please

He walks to the bed and sits I breathe out.

Me: well like I said Nobuhle died before she was even born. She started appearing to me when I moved here in Johannesburg because I was lonely and I had a void inside me I always felt lost so she made whatever plan to make sure she can communicate with me whenever I need her, she pretty much knows everything she's been there

for me even when you were in the hospital she's the one who made sure I keep going I've been wanting to tell you but I was scared you will react like this.

He sighs and rubs his head.

Him: you locked us in here and throw the key out the window can you sister bring it back?

Me: I don't know maybe you should ask her she's right next to you.

He jumps up immediately me and Hlehle laugh out loud.

Him: don't play like that man Lilly.

Me: I'm not lying she's really here sitting on the bed.

His eyes pop out I giggle.

Hlehle: tell him I sat thank you.

Me: why?

Hlehle: for taking care of you and that he must stop doubting himself his doing a great job.

I look at him and tell him what she said his eyes look soft now.

Hlehle: and tell him to stop being hard on his family they do love him very much it's just that they too blinded by material things. Soon they will come back into their senses he must just give them time.

I repeat what she said again and he sighs I never realized his family situation affected him so much.

Hlehle: don't worry Entle you actually the answer to fixing it for him just give it time okay.

Me: me?? How??

Hlehle: stop worrying about it everything is coming together nicely now can I hug him I just want to touch his abs.

Me: you such a pervert.

I look at him and ask him that she wants to hug him he hesitates but agrees Hlehle jumps off the bed and smashes into him I hear him gasping softly his just standing there then I see him smile I smile too then she disappears. Then I see the key flying

through the window and lands on the floor I even forgot about that hey. We spend the rest of the night making love and him asking me 21 questions about Nobuhle and me laughing at his dramatic ass.

JUICE

I wake up alone and I hear giggles coming from the kitchen I get up and go to the kitchen I find my two women playing with water busying splashing it everywhere I smile the way I love these two next thing Ulwazi slips and falls on her huge bums on the floor I bust out laughing they both look at me Nolwazi laughs too and Ulwazis eyes get glossy I go pick her up and carry her to the bedroom I go run a bath for us I start to brush my teeth and she's busy fixing the bed when she's done she strips and comes to the bathroom I take off my boxers and get in the water she gets in as well and lays her head on my chest tomorrow we flying to KZN they going to meet my family and the family is so excited to meet them. I know my relationship with them is taboo and society will have a big problem

with it and I know they will receive most of the backlash because they women. The moment I saw them step out the car at the club I knew I wanted one of them it's just I was not sure which one but when I started to chill with them I fell in love with them both I couldn't choose one and I didn't want too. They don't look like Lilly facially they look more like Amanda Du Point even their hair is just like hers the difference is that they have cubby chicks with dimples and blue eyes small nose and pouty lips their bodies are curvy with a thick ass even though they hit the gym regularly but their hips and ass are just the same size just like Lilly and they very short.

When I'm done bathing with Ulwazi we get out and Nolwazi is in the shower. We get to the bedroom I cuddle Ulwazi these two are like babies they love cuddling it's very nice honestly I never cuddled with other women before so this is really a wonderful experience. As we cuddling Ulwazi starts touching me seductively sex with them is the bomb but they really drain me especially if we have a threesome she starts kissing me I get on top

of her she's just wearing my shirt and I'm in my boxers. I take off the shirt she is wearing and start to kiss her neck down to her perky boobs then I move to her beautiful shaved haven her moans drive me crazy I suck her and gently bite her clit she comes hard with her body shaking I love seeing them enjoy themselves I go back to her face and kiss her roughly I take off my boxers and start rubbing my dick on her she flips me over I like it when they get a bit aggressive I look on my side I see a naked Nolwazi looking at us with lust and busy touching herself next I feel Ulwazi sit slowly on my dick I close my eyes as I feel pleasure I look at her and she has her head back with her eyes closed moaning my name next Nolwazi comes and sits on my face I grab her ass and start to suck her while Ulwazi is riding me. Fuck this is heaven sent they both get louder I know they close they both come together screaming my name I don't come quick I'm not a two minute noodle well I had to learn how to keep it in a little longer because satisfying two women is no child's play. After they both get off me Ulwazi lays on the bed with her

legs spread and Nolwazi bends over giving me a nice view of her ass as she eats up her sister. I gently hold her waist and brush myself in they both tight and warm and always wet I can never get enough of them I start to thrust her hard and fast she stops sucking her sister and starts fingering her the room is filled with moans, groans clapping sounds I swear this used to be my fantasy but now it's my life I'm never leaving them for anything or anyone. I start to feel my build up and Nolwazi is not helping because her pussy is busy tightening up as she's about to come I hear Ulwazi screaming and she starts squinting everywhere that sends me and Nolwazi over the edge we come together. I breath out and pull out my dick my juice drips from her pussy and my dick starts to get hard again I chuckle and I go back and we make love again and again until I'm tired. I go to the bathroom and clean myself I take the towel and pour warm water on it I go back and clean them up they look a bit tired I don't blame them we hardly slept last night and they woke up early to study I go make them food more like greasy food and take

it back to them I find them sleeping I wake them up and we all eat from one plate when I'm done I go put the plate in the kitchen then go back to bed I find them inside the blankets I get in between them I snuggle up to Ulwazi and suck her boob and Nolwazi comes cuddles me from behind I pull Ulwazi closer I'm really a happy man we fall asleep tangled up together. I know we going to spend the rest of the day lazing around when we wake up and they will be back into their hyperactive selves so it's best to rest when they sleeping.

It's now 5am and we in the plane flying to KZN Zizi (Ulwazi) is sleeping on my lap and Nono (Nolwazi) is sleeping on my shoulder I'm just resting my eyes thinking how amazing it feels to be in love and be loved. I never understood how Max does it with Lilly how he is able to switch into this soft person whenever his around her but the moment his outside the world his fucking ruthless I don't think people know how dangerous Max is he doesn't waste time when it comes to killing anyone on his way he will wipe you out and everything related to you it will be like you never

existed but you only see that side of him if you really push him when I first saw Lilly kill the Portuguese I swear they are match made in heaven but whenever they are at home they are just homey and cute. I actually met Max when I was trying to rob him years ago I dropped out of high school because I was hanging around the wrong crowd my parents were struggling to make ends meet so I wanted to help since I have two younger siblings it was not easy for my parents to have neighbors always complaining about me and the police always knocking on my door. All that changed when I met Max he took me under his wing Bongs was not happy about the idea but he learned to live with it. He taught me a lot of things before I knew it I had my first kill I guess he saw something in me and he taught me how to assassinate people honestly I enjoyed it I like how he never forces us to do anything we don't want too we always have a choice. Ever since Lilly came into the picture a lot has changed she has taught us a lot about making money not only starting businesses but also investing and buying shares she says having

money work for you and truth is she really saved us now my family lives in a nice house and I'm taking my siblings to school everyone is happy except obviously those few family members and neighbors who enjoyed seeing us struggling but now all the important people in my life are happy and doing well all thanks to Max and Lilly I'll always remain loyal to them I don't care what happens they have done so much for us and we always be grateful for they always share their knowledge with us if it was other people they would've been greedy and keep using us to their advantage.

We finally lend I go take their luggage honestly we will be here for two days I don't know why they packed so much I walk back to them pulling their bags. I see them standing there looking beautiful Nono is in a long yellow off the shoulder dress with her hair tied up and Zizi is in a short white dress and her big hair with its natural curls is loose they look so beautiful everyone keeps looking at them their skin is just glowing I must give it to Terminator he really made beautiful kids here.

The guard will be driving us I open the door for them they busy just blabbering about whatever I'm just focused on my phone since I'm replying some emails. Eventually we make it home I hop out and open the door for my wives they jump out I see my mom walking towards me fast when she gets here she's grabs my face and starts kissing me all over.

Me: Ma please stop what will my wives say when you do such in front of them.

Mom: Money!! I'm so happy to see you, hello my angels you look so beautiful.

I just leave them there my family calls me money now since I'm rich they so fun I'm sure my ladies will like them. I walk in the kitchen and my little sister who just graduated recently is busy washing the dishes.

Me: little one.

Her: money!

She runs into my arms I spin her around and put her down. My little brother who just started varsity comes down and gives me a bro hug.

Me: how are you?

Mbali: yho... money we are so thirsty hey.

Me: uhmmm... I'm sure you are.

Themba: hai money do the right thing for your siblings.

I just shake my head and pull out a few hundreds and give them Mbali kisses me excited. I do not mind spending money on them they very respectful and they do well in school they've never given my parents problems or anything like that plus they always do as they told so I really don't mind spoiling them that's why I work hard anyway for them to have it easy unlike me plus I don't want them being in the wrong crowd like I did they may not be as fortunate as me and this life is one you don't wish for your loved ones. I walk in to the lounge I find my dad watching TV he stands up immediately and starts dancing this one is another

drama alone I pull out a stack on money and start throwing it to him my mom comes in running and she joins her husband next thing she's twerking on him okay now this is just weird so I stop.

Dad: hai... money why did you stop?

Me: because this is turning into porn real quick.

Mom: so?

Me: ma...eeeewww... no one wants to see that.

Dad: you have two women in your life you should let us teach you a few things in satisfying them.

I frown and hear my ladies giggle behind me. I shake my head and pull them closer I introduce them to dad and we spend the day catching up.

Me: dad I want to marry them.

He looks at me. We chilling in the garden while my mom took my wives away from me.

Dad: are you sure?

Me: yes.

Dad: so which one will be the first wife?

Me: none I want to marry them both at the same time I don't want 1st or 2nd wife nonsense.

Dad: uhmm... okay if you say so.

Truth is this 1st and 2nd wife positions cause problems I've seen it with my uncle he has 4 wives and the 1st one is the one who always makes decisions and rules and the others have to ask her for permission first before doing this or that personally I think that is nonsense hence I don't want my wives to have that title they are just my wives and they both have equal rights to me as their husband and in our marriage I don't want one to feel superior to the other just because she was married first that would never be fair to the other person it's just wrong. If I introduce them to you they will be Nono and Zizi my wives and that's it.

Me: can we please get it done as soon as possible.

Dad: no problem I will send the letter this week and get your uncles ready.

Later we have dinner over a nice conversation with laughter everyone is in good moods even my ladies are now comfortable around my parents eventually we go to sleep and as usual I'm tangled between the two of us them. I woken up by someone wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip .

Her: Baby let go I need to pee.

I know its Nono because she's the one who uses pet names unlike Zizi she calls me with my full name Nhlanhla by the way I'm Nhlanhla Ncobo I'm 27 years old. Zizi is not in bed.

Me: where is your sister?

I whisper in her ear with my eyes closed.

Nono: I think making breakfast with your mom.

Me: uhmm... hurry back.

I let her go. At least I have a bathroom in my room when she's done she comes back and lays on my chest I run my fingers on her back. What I love most about these two is that they give each time to spend with me separately I never have to ask when I'm with one like now the other will not

disturb that gives me time to give them my undivided love and attention. I know they share me but sometimes one on one is important and right now I want to make love to this one on my chest so I pull her chin up and kiss her softly I flip her gently and get on top of her as I deepen the kiss we both naked and my member his busy poking her.

Me: I don't want foreplay can I just make love to you?

I whisper to her with my forehead on hers and she agrees I push myself in her and stop to look at her.

Me: you beautiful.

She blushes I kiss her and intertwine our hands together and I make slow passionate love to her we come together and she has tears in her eyes.

Me: I love you Makhumalo .

Nono: I love you too Baby

I kiss her again and give her another hot passionate round of love making I'm holding on

tight to her and she's busy moaning softly I love her so much.

LILLY

It's been over a month now and I haven't been feeling well so I went to the doctor and he confirmed I'm pregnant I'm actually 7 weeks pregnant which means it happened exactly when I left the hospital I'm very excited I've invited my mom, dad, Baba and Max's family for dinner this coming weekend I want to share the news with everyone in a cute way I want to buy them gifts that will give them a hint that I'm expecting and I asked the doctor to print out scan pictures as well I have a few everyone is getting one. Today its Friday and the dinner is on Sunday Max told me that he send a guard to come get me since his a bit busy I'm knocking off early so I want to pass by the mall and buy the gifts today. As I walk down the stairs something feels off I just brush it off next thing when I get to the parking I feel someone grab me from behind I was about to fight them off but

he put a cloth over my mouth and nose then I became dizzy I hear gun shots then its lights out.

I wake up and I feel dizzy I hear Nobuhle calling me eventually I manage to open my eyes and I see her I look around and it looks like I'm in an abounded room or something it's just filthy it even smells bad I gag a little I'm tied to a chair.

Hlehle: you need to get out of here fast.

Me: But how Hlehle I'm tied on a chair and I'm pregnant I don't want to hurt my baby.

Her: Nthombenhle listen someone very evil is coming for you this here is small waters I will help you don't worry about your babies I will protect them you just fight to get out of here.

I was about to say something when someone just walked into the room its three men they speaking a foreign language I think its Nigerian. I just look at them then they turn their attention to me.

1 guy: you look familiar.

I just look at him I see a table behind him it has knives I smile at him. He comes to me and puts his

hand under my shirt I kick his knee so hard he curses and backhand slaps me so hard. I feel my anger increasing.

Me: I'm going to kill you.

I say calmly looking at him and they laugh at me one kicks my chair and it falls back I hit my head on the floor then they leave I start wiggling my body off this chair they tied my upper body with ropes once I'm off the chair I try to stand up but it's hard so I roll to the wall and use it to stand up when I'm finally up I walk to the table and its combat knives perfect I turn and take one I cut the rope. I'm not worried about being found I know Max is already coming.

Me: Nobuhle. Nobuhle. Nobuhle.

She appears.

Me: I'm ready let's go.

Her: okay

I take the knives and walk out the door I see passage.

Hlehle: this way be ready to fight don't hold back nothing is going to happen to your babies.

Me: okay.

I see the first guy he charges at me I go in full force and fuck him up he cant even fight I stab him on the neck and his blood oozes out I walk again and find that who slapped me I smile at him he comes for me I just stab his stomach he freezes and looks back into my eyes I run both the knives across his stomach and his intestines fall out his friend grabs me from behind I stab his thighs and he let's me go I stab his neck and run out the door. I see black cars coming in the yard.

Hlehle: you need to run fast Entle go over the wall and run fast don't look back I'll keep them busy.

I run to the back of the house and jump over the wall it's just a forest here I'm still in my formal clothes I don't even have my shoes on I start to run fast into the forest hoping I don't meet any wild animal and nothing stabs my foot I keep running I've been running for a while.

Hlehle: rest now.

I just sit under the tree and catch my breath I feel a slight pain on my lower abdomen I put my hand there and brush it gently.

Hlehle: don't worry they fine you need to start moving now.

I stand and start walking it's now just black I cant see anything I keep walking for a while and finally I find a road I just start walking straight on it I don't even know where it's going it's just dark I keep walking then I see a truck coming I just stand in the middle he starts to hoot at me I just stand there eventually it stops in front of me I walk to the side of the driver it's an old man I greet him.

Me: can I please get a lift to wherever you going.

He hesitates first and agrees I jump in the passenger seat.

Me: where are you going?

Him: to cross the border into South Africa.

Me: where are we now?

He looks at me and back to the road.

Him: you in Botswana.

Me: okay my name is Lilly.

Him: nice to meet you would you like anything to drink or eat?

My stomach grumbles immediately.

Me: yes please.

He gives me bottle of water and some chicken I eat like I haven't had food in forever.

Him: it's not safe for a lady like you be on the road at this time especially that road.

Me: I also don't think it's safe for an old man who should be retired to be in the road at this time picking up girls I could a ghost you know.

He chuckles and looks at me for same reason I feel very comfortable around him.

Him: ghosts don't eat or drink anything offered to them.

I look at him.

Me: you really thought I'm a ghost?

Him: yes I've seen a couple and heard stories about them.

Me: can I please use your phone.

He hands it to me I dial Max's number it rings for a while then he picks up.

Him: what?

Gosh he sounds so scary.

Me: Max...

Him: Lilly I'm on my way are you good?

He speaks so fast.

Me: calm down I'm okay I'm heading to the boarder now can you get me there?

Him: I'm actually there right now. Who are you with?

Me: I got a lift from a truck driver I'll explain everything when I get there.

Him: okay... I love you Lilly.

Me: I love you too.

I hang up and give him back his phone I look at him and his really old he should be home enjoying his retirement not being a truck driver.

Me: why are you still working at this old age?

He looks at me and chuckles.

Him: why are running around at night covered in blood?

I look at myself I actually look like a mess I don't even have shoes on and his right I'm cover in blood.

Me: bad people are trying to kill me so I had to fight and run as far as I could.

Him: I have a family and grandchildren to take care of.

I nod my head and look out the window eventually I fall asleep I'm really tired. I feel someone shake me I open my eyes and see a lot of lights I look over to this old man.

Him: we here and I don't think they will let you cross over.

I start to look around I see black SUVs I know its Max but let me call him first.

Me: I please call my husband first?

He gives me his phone again I call Max and he picks up immediately.

Me: where are you? I'm here.

I look over the SUVs I see the door opening I my Max stepping out I hang up.

Me: please don't leave yet.

Him: you do realize I'm working right.

Me: yes please just 10 minutes.

Him: okay.

I jump out the car and run to Max when he sees me he runs to me and picks me up he hold me so tightly I cant breath.

Me: I can't breath.

Him: I'm sorry are you hurt?

He says putting me down and busy touching me.

Me: stop I'm okay I just need you to pay that man the truck driver I don't even know his name.

Him: okay let's go to him.

We walk to the truck driver his name is David Max said since his going to Johannesburg we will just drive with him one of the guards is going to drive the truck I took off the bloody blouse I was wearing Max's sweater when we get into the car with the old man we fall asleep he must be tired too. I will talk to Max later about what happened I'm sure whoever took me is his enemy.

Today is Sunday it's the day of the dinner. I've spoken to Max about the kidnapping it turns out it's the gang from Thailand once I killed the Portuguese they took the opportunity to take over their business the problem started when they wanted to go into business with Max and he refused then they decided its smart to take girls from Botswana and Malawi and those are Max's territory the girls were going to be used for human trafficking when Max found out he saved the girls which pissed off the Thailand gang and now

they've made Max very angry by taking me he has all of them with their families in the warehouse he said he will deal with them soon I know once he finds out I'm pregnant he will not allow me anywhere close to the warehouse especially after the stunt I pulled with Bongs. The truck driver Max gave him 2 million for helping me and I gave him 1 million to go home and enjoy his retirement he was so happy he even cried I also cried with him I think these hormones are about to make me a cry baby my I haven't had my morning sickness since I saw the doctor his medication is helping.

I've been sending Max up and down preparing for this dinner his annoyed by me shame and it's cute Im done with everything for tonight I even set the table nicely I made my mom's famous malva pudding and her homemade it doesn't taste as good as hers but it's good either way. I just finished showering I can see my stomach looks like I'm bloated it's my baby bump I wonder if Max has noticed anyway I decided to wear a long floral flowy summer dress it hides the bump and the weight gain perfectly plus I'm also hiding my

swollen feet. I had my hair braided into a nice simple straight up it's long though I put on my mascara and lip gloss this pregnancy has me glowing actually my skin is really glowing I hope they don't suspect anything I can hear some noise coming from down stairs I know those are my parents and Baba. When I walk down the stairs everyone goes quiet and looks at me I finally make it to them without tripping since their eyes are gawking at me.

Me: what??

Max: you look really beautiful.

He says staring at me I blush so much my dad and Baba bust out laughing at me now I feel like crying my eyes get blurry looking at them laughing at me.

Owami: what's wrong baby why are you crying now?

Me: why are they laughing at me?

Max is just looking at me confused they stop laughing at me immediately Baba pulls me in for a

hug now I feel fine. Max's family arrived we've been having dinner and now we eating dessert.

Dad: Baby your malva pudding is nice but not as good as my wife's.

I roll my eyes well I'm not surprised there.

Max mom: this is just too much fat.

She says with a frown and poking it around she has been making funny comments ever since she got here. Max's dad and Baba have been having their own business conversation Michael has been quite and Tumi looks like she's carrying the world on her shoulders my dad, owami, Max and I have been having our own nice conversation the sisters are just glued to their phones now that everyone is done eating our house help comes to clear the table I go get the presents for them. I place them in front of them one by one the only person who didn't get is Tumi I still don't like her I know I'm petty like that.

Me: okay don't open them first I will tell you.

Now the sisters have put away their phones. I take out mine and start to take a video.

Me: okay you may open them.

They open them and my mom is just looking into the box then she looks at me with her glossy eyes Max's mother pulls out the cup and looks at me with tears running down her face Max is just busy looking at me then back into the box then me again. Well the cups are written Dad to be or Grandma to be or grandpa to be aunt to be or uncle to be then there is a sonar picture inside.

Dad: Nthombenhle can you not see that I'm young and sexy to be a grandfather?

I just giggle.

Max mom: I'm going to be a grandmother?

She asks still with her tears running down.

Me: yes you going to be a grandma.

Max's dad stands up and pulls max into a hug suddenly its emotional in here I even have my tears coming out now they hug for a while I think they both crying. He whispers something in Max's

ear and lets him go then Max turns to me his eyes are red he looks down at me.

Max: I'm really going to be a dad?

I nod my head and he goes down on his knees and goes under my dress thank God it's long and flowy I feel his hand on my stomach he then kisses it I giggle as I find it ticklish. He comes back up and kisses me. The sisters are just happy and busy screaming making noise while singing.

Baba: you people just keep making me old and I don't understand.

Dad: can you not see yourself that you very old you a great grandfather now 5 to being an ancient ancestor.

We laugh at him

Baba: excuse me I'm sexy as fuck the ladies call me daddy.

We laughed even worse.

Owami; Nthombi ka Baba you grew up fast not so long ago you were clinging on Baba sucking your fingers.

Max: and now she sucks bigger things.

I give him a look my dad throws a napkin at him his dad and Michael bust out laughing. Something is seriously wrong with Max. We have a nice night full of laughter everyone decided that they are sleeping over except Tumi thank heavens for that lucky this house is big enough to accommodate everyone.

Its morning and everyone just had breakfast everyone is in a happy mood including my Max I've never seen him this happy his been smiling ever since last night. I'm currently in the kitchen looking for my ice cream I hide it in the freezer so that no one eats it.

.....: how do you do it?

Some deep voice says behind me I find my ice cream and pull it out its chocolate ice cream with biscuits I drool immediately and I turn its Michael I've never had a conversation with Michael ever this is going to be interesting. I take the spoon and sit on the high chair facing him.

Me: how do I do what?

Michael: make him happy and love him.

Me: I don't understand your question.

Michael: his very intimidating and scary how can a woman like you fall for him it doesn't make sense at all and that scar on his face is hideous and then you get pregnant by him really Lilly??

Me: it's not supposed to make sense to you because you not my husband but I will tell you is that what you and your family did to him hurt him very bad it was not nice at all. Your father disowned him at very young age and left him to fend for himself your mother didn't bother standing up for him and protect him and you turned your back on him just because you were busy trying to prove that you better then him basically he had nothing and no one. Everything I have mentioned would turn anyone's heart into stone but not Max his heart is still soft as a baby's bum. None of you have acknowledged your wrongs and apologized to him but yet here you are in his house eating his food and sharing precious

moments with him and he has never mentioned anything about what you all did to him. You see that scar on his face he got that fighting for food that someone throw away and some street kid who was hungry just like him stabbed him with a beer bottle just for leftovers he found in the bin. You are his brother Michael and not once did you try to reach out to him and help him but all you did is rejoice in his struggle and now all of you here are busy acting like nothing happened well news flash just because he doesn't say anything doesn't mean I wont. You see that persona he has now and that scar you call hideous makes him a much better man than you and your father can ever be combined. His all tough and scary because he learned to man up real fast now instead of going to apologize for your wrongs you standing in my kitchen asking me bullshit I will fuck you up Michael you see what I did to your wife is small waters do not come into my husband's house and try to disrespect him I'll forget that I'm pregnant and jump over this counter and spoon your eyes out and believe no one will stop me.

I see him swallow his spit and look behind me I feel my blood rush I know its Max I turn and find Max and his father standing there with their hands in their pockets Gosh they look so much alike it's weird.

Me: how long have you been standing there?

Max's dad: long enough to know that you love my son enough to threaten to kill that one.

Me: I don't make empty threats Mr. Ngidi.

I looks at me for a while I return the look he blinks a couple of times I think he gets the picture.

Max's dad: Michael gather everyone in the lounge or dinning table.

He mumbles whatever walking out I look at Max hasn't said anything his just been staring at me. We leave the kitchen and find everyone on the dinning table I still have my ice cream with me this thing is delicious we all gathered waiting for Max's dad to start. I'm sitting right across Michael who keep moving uncomfortably this one really wants my crazy to shine maybe I should just let it go and

blame it on the pregnancy yeah that will do I want him to try me I want to see how far I can take it.

Max's dad: I asked everyone here to join me as I want to correct wrongs I have done years back.

He looks down and sighs.

Max's dad: uhmm... years back I did something that shouldn't be done to any child as a parent. I disowned my son because he didn't want to be a yes man he wanted to stand on his own and be his own man and I wanted to tame him and hold him back and he stood up for himself and instead of being proud and supporting him I threw him out and never looked back. One day he came back a different man and I've been ashamed to admit my wrongs and apologize right now I wish I could take credit of the man he has become not only am I proud of him but he brought me a daughter in law who is amazing and very strong willed. Today Sphehile made me realize how wrong we have done Nkanyezi...

He gets interrupted by this stupid idiot shit head.

Michael: dad Max is a criminal and you know it and now you proud of what exactly?? Look at him his ugly and...

I didn't let him finish whatever he was about to say I just threw the spoon at him so hard it hit him between his eyes as he was busy trying to process whatever that is happening I jumped on the table and went right across him I hear everyone calling me I land right on him and he falls back on the chair with me on top of him the moment we land on the floor I start throwing punches at him he keeps blocking them I feel someone trying to pull me I just push them and grab Michael's hands and pin them on the floor I put my knees on top of them and start punching him he keeps wiggling trying to get out of my hold but his words keep ringing in my head which get me even angrier I see my spoon and I take it I start hitting him with it by now his bleeding from his nose and mouth and I don't know where I feel someone grab me from behind I know I'm going to be pulled off him so I grab his head and bite his ear so hard he screams by now I'm in the air I wrapped my legs around Michael

I'm definitely not letting him go that easy I did warn him he didn't listen. I know its Max who is holding me from behind his dad comes in front of me and tries to unhook my legs around him I dig my teeth deeper and I bite off his ear I spit it out and bite his nose he screams so loud he sounds like a sissy. By now the only attached thing together is my teeth on his nose and his still screaming his scream sound so annoying. I can hear everyone still calling me and saying whatever but their voices sound so far I try to pull my hand so that I strangle him but Max's grip around me is pretty strong so I just dig my teeth deeper again and his nose comes off I spit it out.

Me: now I want to see who the fuck is ugly you stupid bitch! The next time I see you I'm going to cut off your nibbles you fucking disgusting little piece of shi...

Max covers my mouth and I just keep humming out my insults. He doesn't know me I'm going to cut off those nipples. I decided to calm down his face is covered by a towel I'm just looking at him

I'm waiting for the opportunity to cut off his nipples. I feel Max loosen his grip I still have my eyes on him.

Owami: Max get her out of here!

I see a scissor on the coffee table since we now in the lounge I don't know how we got in here I look back at Michael everyone is still panicking and doing whatever good that means they not looking at me Max was about to go with me I slipped through his arms taking my shirt off in the process I take the scissors and jump on Michael I tear his shirt fast because know someone is going to try and stop me I feel someone try to hold me I just stab their hand and it moves away I cut his one nipple fast I still hear their screams I feel someone pull me back I know its Max again I take his other nibble in my fingers and run the scissor through it by the time I get off him I have his nibble in my hand and the scissors.

Owami: Max I told you to get her out off here now!

Now I'm happy I breath out where is my ice-cream. He just carries me to our room when we get there

he just strips me since I'm covered in blood. He tries to take the nibble I have in my hand.

Me: put it away safely I want to frame it.

He looks at me weirdly and just continues doing what his doing then he gets into the shower carrying me he cleans me up nicely when his done he cuddles me while brushing my stomach.

Me: I'm hungry.

Him: what would you like to eat.

Me: pizza, burger, some wings oh... and some chips.

Him: okay.

He takes his phone and starts typing then he puts it away. I fall asleep eventually he wakes me up when the food arrives we both eat in silence.

Me: are you mad at me?

I ask ready to cry I don't like how quiet his been.

Him: I can never be mad you Lilly it's just I'm still trying to process what happened.

Me: I'm sorry.

Him: don't be sorry I know I would've defend you if I was in your shoes I don't think I would've used my teeth though maybe a bullet but not my teeth. I'm just happy that somebody stood up for me for the first time it feels very weird but I'm very grateful.

I giggle. And look at him he sighs.

Him: I just don't understand what have I done to Michael for him to be like this towards me I wish I knew then maybe I can fix it.

Now I don't know what to say I just go over to him and hug him he has his head between my boobs he holds me tightly evenly he falls asleep. Later I start to crave some ice cream so I get out of bed and go downstairs I find Owami with Baba drinking tea they stop talking and look at me I go to the freezer and look for my stash and take it out and go get a spoon I sit next to Baba I see Nobuhle next to Owami they still looking at me I just ignore them and start eating next thing they bust out laughing I look at them they laughing so much they even

have tears in their eyes it's so contagious I start to giggle.

Baba: did you really have to bite off his nose though?

They continue laughing.

Owami: no Baba what finished me is when she cut off the nibbles you should've seen Max's face.

They laugh louder.

Baba: his also too slow when you told him to get her out of there he was busy looking at other things. The way you slipped through his hands he just couldn't believe it his eyes popped out.

We laugh hard about what happened.

Owami: you stabbed my husband Entle.

Me: Next time he must keep his hands to himself.

Baba: you just as crazy as your mother the Nigidi's haven't seen anything yet I wish I could be a fly in this family.

Me: you love drama Baba.

I look at Nobuhle she winks at me and disappears.

MAX

I swear Lilly never ceases to amaze me her pregnancy has her crazy going over the roof not to mention her crying the way I hate seeing her cry it drives me crazy. Right now we just landed in KZN there is a family meeting I do not know what to expect because Lilly here is just I don't know what to even say but honestly when I heard her defend me in the kitchen I fell in love with her even more and when she attacked Michael that was cherry on top yes a part of me is hurt about how my brother thinks of me but Lilly's trade of not caring about what people think about me is slowly rubbing of me. I've decided to starve the Thailand's and their families I will deal with them later I'm still trying to adjust to Lilly's hormones I 'can't juggle so many things right now she is just a handful. I'm so happy that she is pregnant when she told me that she planned it I didn't believe her I thought she wanted kids later in life and I didn't want to push

her I'm 30 years and she is 20 so I really didn't want to put her under pressure. We now in KZN I made sure I stock up on ice cream because the last time she woke me up crying in the AMs I cant have that. We walk in the house and uncle Joe and Lilly run into each others arms you see these two are going to be trouble especially with her being pregnant and crazy I just see a lot of trouble. Ever since we got here we've been locked up in my room making love I forgot to tell you that she's always horny and she loves blow jobs now she says it's like sucking or licking ice-cream well I don't care what she thinks all I'm saying is I'm enjoying my always horny wife. I leave her sleeping and go downstairs and I find uncle joe chilling outside rolling a joint.

Me: you still smoke weed?

Him: I will never stop. Tell me here what happened to Michael when he came here he had his face covered I only saw a blue eye the other one is closed

I chuckle first thinking about that day when Godfather told me that she is crazy I thought he was joking.

Me: let's smoke that joint first then I will tell you.

Him: now you speaking my language.

We smoke his joint over a stupid conversation I don't remember when was the last time I had weed it's been a while. We now high as fuck I start to tell him without leaving any details about what happened to Michael and his dead with laughter his even crying well we both laughing and crying. One of the kids calls us saying dinner is ready I follow him when we walk in we find everyone on the dinner table seated I go sit next to Lilly I kiss her cheek and she looks at me with a frown I know she can smell the weed she just keeps looking at me until I sit I don't want to look at her because she probably looks deadly so no I'm not looking at her she scares the shit out of me. I look around the table and I see Michael covered in bandages his eyes do look really bruised badly I've seriously grown new respect for Lilly her punches

are the real deal I've seen it in the gym but I never thought that those tinny fists can cause so much damage, next to him its Tumi and her parents one thing I know is those two really like running their mouths I think its because they think being rich makes them untouchable I have a feeling that my whole family is going to experience my wife's crazy and honestly I'm too high to stop her when they push her. I turn to look at my wife and she's just eating her ice cream you can tell she is enjoying it because she's busy dancing gently on her chair she's even humming softly I smile she's the most beautiful woman I've ever seen and the way she keeps licking that spoon just turns me on she looks exactly like this when she sucks me, she turns and looks at me licking her spoon.

Her: what is it?

She says with a frown I just smile at her she's so beautiful.

Her: whatever you smoked stop it its messing with you and you stink.

I smell myself I don't stink I go close to kiss her and she pushes me.

Her: stinky.

She then goes back to her ice cream I quickly kiss her lips and she looks at me with a frown again I just grin at her I hear someone clear their throat it's my dad I find them looking at us.

Me: before we start with this I think we should start with a prayer.

They all look at me weirdly expect Lilly who is busy with her ice cream and uncle Joe giggles next to me.

Mom: Maxwell please stop with your games this meeting is important and as you can see we have guests.

Me: uhmmm... don't say I didn't tell you.

I lean over to uncle Joe since he's next to me and whisper.

Me: you going to enjoy this meeting .

Then I lean back he just chuckles and whispers back.

Joe: I cant wait I've missed too much from the previous one.

Dad: okay now that we all here I would like to welcome Tumis parents to our home them being here is about their daughter which we will get into...

He get interrupted by Tumis mom.

T mom: no we will get into it now who the fuck is the skank that thinks she has a right to lay her hands on my daughter?! Ngidi you now allow cheap girls into this family?!

I slowly feel my blood boil I look at her clearly she was never told about insulting my wife.

Me: were you never told that I don't take it well when someone insults my wife?

Her husband jumps in...

T dad: you not going to threaten us here don't you dare for a second think that your disgusting face scares me you a boy to me yo...

We get interrupted by noise on my side and I see eyes popping out with gasps around the table I look on my side and my lovely wife with her spoon in her mouth has my gun in her tinny hands she checks the bullets and removes the safety then cocks it she then puts it on the table she takes her ice-cream tub and continues eating. See why I love her so much I just smile and lean back looking at them.

Me: you were saying?

They swallow their spits blinking a lot I raise my one eyebrow.

Joe: I think it's time for that prayer let's hold hands.

He says taking my hand and my aunts hand on his side he closes his eyes and looks up. I just look at him.

Joe: dear God your people want to see you please open your gates for them. Forgive them for their sins and accept them with open arms. Their time on earth is about to end if they do not behave

please God talk to your children they are testing the wrong person with the speed they going I can already see their grave. Please make them see that Max is beautiful his a handsome man we do not want to die now it's not our time yet but I pray that the rest of us who behave and see Max's beauty live long to witness your will God. Lilly would you like to add anything?

I turn to look at Lilly I really need to talk to the doctor about this ice-cream I don't want my child to have diabetes.

Lilly: Amen.

Joe: amen.

He let's go of our hands and opens his eyes I do not know what kind of prayer is that but I really hope it worked. Everyone on the table was just looking at him.

Dad: Siphosihle I don't think this being on the table is necessary.

Lilly looks at him and tilts her head I see him get uncomfortable on his chair I'm not going to

interfere this time around clearly he didn't learn a lesson with the previous meeting plus uncle joe prayed so whatever happens its Gods will.

Joe: Ngidi just start the meeting I have women to go attend too.

Dad: okay fine like I said before there are issues that I think need to be cleared starting with what happened the last time between Siphosihle and Michael. First Siphosihle we do not condone violence in this family I do not know how you were raised but here we do not use our hands to communicate.

All this time Lilly is looking at him with a serious face she even put her ice cream aside but she still has the spoon in her hand.

Lilly: Mr. Ngidi I'm a very humble and respectful person and you know this. You and Max were there when I spoke to Michael I believe I was clear when I told him to watch his mouth when it comes to Max I do not stutter Mr. Ngidi my warning was very clear I told him in simple words that I will fuck him up if he tries to disrespect my husband so

I guess he wanted to witness it therefore me putting my hands on him is entirely his fault it has nothing to do with me because I did warn him.

My dad sighs he knows he will not win this argument even if he tried.

T Dad: can we now move on to what happened to my daughter. My daughter didn't get married in this family to be abused now tell me who put their hands on my daughter.

All this time Tumi is smirking.

Joe: your daughter was beat up because she is a hoe and she needed to be put back in her lane.

T mom: you will not talk like that about my daughter do you know who we are?

Joe: do you want to find out who is Siphosihle?

T dad: can you tell me who did that to my daughter?

Joe: why don't you ask her yourself?

Tumi: it was Lilly daddy.

She says still with a smirk on her face pointing at Lilly.

T dad: do you know who I am girlie?

Lilly is just looking at him unbothered.

T dad: I'm talking to you man!

He says banging the table and the ladies jump but my Lilly is still unbothered well like I said I'm staying out of this he may continue pressing her buttons.

Joe: Father God look at your children coming to your gate.

He says with his eyes closed shaking his bowed head and his hands high in the air I just chuckle relaxing in my chair.

Mom: I think you should calm down Mr. Mokgosi.

T dad: don't tell me what to do! This little girl thinks putting a gun on the table scares me.

Joe: uhmmm... Jesus father God they coming very fast.

T mom: little girl you think your scary ugly husband can stop us from coming for you? Huh?!

Lilly looks at me I know she's asking for permission to do as she please I just nod my head and she smirks looking back at them.

Lilly: I dare you to call my husband names again.

Joe: oh... dear God.

T dad: do not tell about that stupid fuck how can you call that a husband...

Lilly grabs the gun and shots right at him she misses by an inch everyone is already screaming and running out the house I'm just layed back my dad is on his feet including Lilly he tries to take the gun from her and she hits his hand hard with her spoon she points the gun again at Tumis parents they quickly run out the room she just starts shooting going after them everyone is just screaming its honestly a mess I stand up and follow them taking Lilly's ice cream with me I start eating it with my finger since she has the spoon. I find them in the kitchen busy ducking using the

counter she just shooting I know she's just scaring them because if she really wanted to shot them she would have done that with the first shot. She's actually enjoying this you can see on her face its like she's playing a game and this ice cream is actually very nice I like the crunch next thing tumis dad tries to run out the door she shoots his leg he goes down immediately screaming my dad tries to stop her again.

Lilly: do you want to catch a bullet Mr. Ngidi?

My dad just looks at her scared well I don't blame him her eyes look pretty dark right now. She walks to Tumis dad and pulls him with his ear to her level his just groaning in pain. I don't know if it's the weed or what but this ice cream is going in I go get myself a spoon and start eating looking at Lilly. She points the gun on his face still pulling his ear.

Lilly: do you now know who I am?

He just nods his head fast.

Lilly: use your words.

Him: yes I know I know...

He says ready to cry.

Lilly: now what did you say about my husband?

He just starts crying uncle Joe is just looking at Lilly with his eyes popped out.

T dad: I'm sorry...

Lilly: no no no.... Remember you had the balls to talk shit about my husband maybe I should just blow them off since they give you too much power right.

She says moving the gun to his balls he cries even louder pleading with her my dad is just looking at her with eyes popping uncle Joe has his hands over his head with his jaw hanging Tumis mom is crying hysterically my aunts just keep picking hiding behind the wall, okay this is going far now maybe I should stop her but neah I did say I'm staying out of this one. Next thing she pulls the trigger I just close my eyes I don't want to see balls blow up only to find that the gun is empty.

Lilly: lucky you should thank uncle Joe for his prayers.

She then lets him go and walks away then she turns to look at Tumis mom.

Lilly: your time is coming.

She says pointing at her with her spoon what's with her and spoons these days she always has one with her. She then walks away I know she is going to the bedroom. I follow her and find her taking off her clothes first thing I see is her thick ass its looks bigger and her hips look wider she really looks very sexy plus the white lace underwear is really doing her justice I walk to her and wrap my arms around her my hand lands on her small bump I kiss her neck and she tilts her head to give me excess I kiss her softly while I run my hands on her body I turn her around she looks up at me she's really beautiful she removes my shirt and I take off her bra her boobs look bigger I touch them gently and squeeze them.

Her: not too hard they painful.

Me: I'm sorry.

I bend down and grab her ass and pick her up she wraps her legs around me she still has her beautiful eyes on me I walk to the bed and gently put lay her I take off her thong and take off my jeans with my boxers I get on top of her today I just want to bury myself in her and make sweet love to her. I kiss her slowly and loose myself in the kiss I really love her she's my everything I pull out the kiss and look at her as I push myself inside her wet minky she moans softly as she still has her eyes on mine I also groan I sneak my arm around her waist as I push in deeper she squeezes my shoulders and my body shivers to her touch I make slow love to her she ends up crying on my chest I would give the world to this woman I love her with my whole being. We end up cuddling with her singing until I hear her stomach grumbles I go get us food since we didn't have dinner the house is dead quiet when I walk in the kitchen I find uncle Joe busy dishing up for himself. I join him and dish up for me and Lilly his just quiet its unlike him I think his still taken back about what happened earlier. We

spend the whole night making love until she gets tired and sleep.

Today juice called me since his in KZN with the twins so we decided to go to kasi at a chisanyama joint with some of our old friends we haven't seen in a while. The vibe is nice and cool we just finished eating now we just drinking beer talking about the old days and laughing I haven't had boys night out in a while this is really refreshing. Lilly called to check on me I told her I'm still with the guys it's around 9pm she was cool with it and we not having a wild night it's just a relaxed night even the dj is playing chilled music. There is a table next to us its girls and some of my friends are entertaining them me and juice are the only ones who are not into them some did try to get our attention I told them to fuck off so we good as I'm busy talking to my boy Tummy next to me Biggy pokes me I look at him he points with his eyes to another direction I look there my jaw drops immediately as the Khumalo babies walk in looking all sorts of sexy it's my Lilly and her sisters and her three cousins who look like models

facially the all look alike but Lilly looks more white then colored. She is wearing a short black jumpsuit which has lace detailing with gold heels her hair is braided nicely, for some reason they look like they walking in slow motion everyone has their eyes on them Shekhinah- Please Mr. starts playing her eyes find mine and she smiles, starts dancing while walking to me she keeps moving her hips and hands and turning around everyone is just looking at her with googly eyes I don't blame them its difficult to take your eyes off her she just dances so beautifully I think I'm blushing even eventually they make it to our table and they look around looking at these girls she then comes to sit on my lap and kisses me softly I feel my dick jerk and pull out the kiss.

Me: you look beautiful Mrs. Ngidi.

She looks down and blushes I kiss her pink cheeks. Her sister gives her a mini cooler box she opens it and takes out her ice-cream and spoon.

Me: Lilly I thought we talked about you wearing heels you know how your feet get.

She chooses to ignore me and greet Juicy who has both the twins on his lap I really don't know how he does it but they look happy and in love. Honestly the Khumalo babies came with a vibe they even opened a dance floor next to our table they sing to every song and keep dancing the DJ is even hyped his been playing Nigerian music it's like they don't have hip bones their waists are loose even Lilly she doesn't even look pregnant you can tell that some people want to move to our table but we not having that even these girls with us they are behaving no one is being bitchy it's just a great vibe. The song just finished and they about to sit down but the DJ switched to old school Kwaito they just started screaming and went back to dance to say I'm surprised it's an understatement they know how to dance pantsula they look Trompis I don't even know how they can move their feet like that with heels on Ulwazi is even whistling everyone is cheering them on they really having fun Juice even joined them well his a kasi boy so there is no surprise there. Overall the

night was a jump from now on when I go out I'm going to make sure the Khumalo babies are there.

We came back to Johannesburg and we just left the hospital since it was her check up I'm so excited she is carrying twins and the doctor said she must slow down on the ice cream I don't know how I'm going to work that one out but I will make a plan. We now sitting at a restaurant we having lunch and I'm so happy I don't know what to do with myself I just keep looking at her and thanking God she's really amazing. As we sitting enjoying our food over a silly conversation we get disturbed by someone I haven seen in years.

.....: Max is that you?!

She says walking towards me she looks nice and grown I stand and give her a friendly hug I'm just amazed.

Me: wow Fiona look at you.

I say looking at her she's really grown we meet in the streets me, her and Bongs we were close we were always together and hustled together and

one day she just disappeared we looked for her and we never found her.

Fiona: it's been like what? Over 10 years?

Me: yea please sit and join us for lunch, this is my lovely wife Lilly.

Fiona: oh you married..

Me: yea a lot happened when you were gone. Lilly this is an old friend of mine Fiona.

Lilly: hey nice to meet you.

She says looking at Fiona. We have a catch up conversation while Lilly is just concentrating on her food well that's Lilly for you, eventually we leave later Fiona and I exchanged numbers we will hang out another time. When we get home Lilly goes straight to sleep I go to my office and catch up on some work later I go check on Lilly she's still sleeping so I order dinner for us as I'm sitting on the counter going through my phone a call comes through I don't know this number but I answer anyway.

Me: hello.

...: Hi Max its Fiona I hope you got home safe.

Me: oh... hi yeah sure and you?

Her: yes but I'm staying at a hotel I need to get myself a place.

Me: I actually have a place you can use while you look I know how it can get tiring looking for a place.

Her: thank you so much you such a life savor.

Me: you welcome I'll text you a restaurant tomorrow where we can meet up or I'll send you my current address you can come fetch the keys.

Her: okay I'll wait for the text.

Me: okay I have to go now bye.

Her: oh....ok bye.

The food arrives I go wake up Lilly which is a mission she's been sleeping for too long now and she needs to feed my kids next week she is going back to work so I'll be working from home until then. After we done eating we watch her movies until she falls asleep. Nothing much has been

happening I've been hanging out with Fiona she moved in my bachelor pad since I don't use it anymore plus it's a temporary thing Lilly made it clear that she doesn't like her and she doesn't like that I'm friends with her but I think it's just she doesn't like a lot of people Fiona is harmless turns out she was a victim of human trafficking and she managed to escape and went back to school now she works in marketing so she decided to come back home I guess I did have Biggy look into her and she is clean. I'm in my office with Juice we just finished our meeting when Fiona calls to tell me she is in the neighborhood so she is going to pass by I have no problem.

Juice: Max I don't like your new friend I think it's best you stay away from her I think she's bad news.

Me: not you too Juice I come far with her she's cool maybe if you could hang out with you'll see.

Juice: are you that blind Max?

Me: okay now you loosing me.

Juice: that chick likes you everyone can see it except you.

Me: you are just seeing things I'm not even interested in her like that she's like a little sister and she knows I love Lilly and I'm married.

He shakes his head.

Juice: I'm warning you Max that girl is going to bring problems between you and Lilly.

Me: I don't think so.

Juice: uhmmm... let me leave I don't want to see her.

He says standing up I walk him out and go check on Lilly and she's sleeping I kiss her and she moves mumbling whatever I let her be she's always sleeping I leave her and go back downstairs the security calls to tell me Fiona is here I let her in she's been here before and Lilly made it very clear that she hates her so I hope she doesn't stay long or she will upset Lilly and I don't want that. She knocks I go open for her we walk in the kitchen she

sits on the high chair while I get her something to drink.

Me: so you where doing what in the neighborhood?

Fiona: I was dropping off some papers to a client.

Me: okay.

Fiona: you know I still can not believe that Bongs died and you married I never pictured you married at all.

Me: well truth is I also never pictured myself married until Lilly came along.

Fiona: she really doesn't like me.

Me: no she doesn't but don't take it personal she's not a people's person so she dislikes a lot of people.

Fiona: I'm actually hungry don't you have something I can eat.

Me: I can make you a sandwich I cant cook for shits Lilly does that.

Fiona: let me cook maybe that can put me in her good books.

Me: well... that's worth a try.

I say shrugging my shoulders she gets up I show her were everything is I gave her a apron she is cooking stew and rice we just talking about general things.

Fiona: come taste.

Me: I still don't trust your cooking.

Fiona: come on Max.

Me: fine

I stand and walk around I get next to her she takes a spoon and takes out a piece of meat from the pot she directs the spoon to my mouth I open and eat it well it's not bad but Lilly's stew is much more juicy and mouthwatering I cant say that to her so after I swallow.

Me: it's okay.

Fiona: just okay?

Me: yes just okay.

She then looks up at me for a while I look at her I think her one eye is smaller than the other suddenly she smashes her lips on mine I just freeze she bits my lower lip what is happening and suddenly I feel chest pains I pull out and hold my chest when I turn my head I find Lilly standing on the bottom stairs looking at us. Fuck fuck now how do I explain this she doesn't take her eyes off mine they look glossy.

Me: Fiona I think it's best you leave.

I say calmly still looking at Lilly I see a tear drop my chest feels like someone is squeezing my lungs in she turns and walks back up.

Me: Fiona why are you still here?

I turn and look at her right now I just want to snap her neck.

Fiona: look Max I.... I.... Love you I always have please.

Me: Fiona if you don't walk out that door I will drag you.

Fiona: Max ple....

I just grabbed her hair and pull her out she screaming and crying and kicking I don't care I'm so pissed at myself right now I throw her out the gate and walk back when I get to my door those chest pains hit me hard I bend holding my chest I feel a lump on my throat my stomach turns I know its Lilly I only feel like this when she is crying or hurting emotionally. I pull myself together and go up to our room I hear the shower running I sit on the bed and bury my head in my hands. How can I be so stupid she told me multiple times to stay away from her even juice warned me but I didn't listen and my wife is hurting and it's all my fault I keep rubbing my chest fuck it's so painful I start to hit it with my fist as I feel like its closing in then I hear a loud sob coming from the bathroom I jump up and run in there I find her in the shower on her knees and her hand on her chest her cry is so painful I feel my tears fall out I wipe them then I close the water and pick her up she holds me tight and cries painfully on my shoulder.

Me: I'm sorry...

I say as my voice is failing me I put her gently on the bed and take off my clothes I open the blankets and get in with her I pull her close to me she's still crying and this is hurting me my tears come out again why didn't I listen. I hold her tightly she cries herself to sleep she even has hiccups. I just stay up looking at the ceiling asking myself why didn't I listen to my wife when she spoke to me since when do I put someone before her I don't even put myself before her. I fall asleep eventually I'm woken up by her wiggling in my arms I tighten my grip around her she stops moving.

Me: Lilly I'm so sorry.

I say softly I still have chest pains she doesn't say anything.

Her: I need to pee.

She says her voice is barely there I let her go she goes to the bathroom then I hear the shower going on I get out of bed and I fix it and go to the bathroom I brush my teeth and wash my face then go to the kitchen I throw out all the food Fiona cooked I even throw the pots I then make her a few

sandwiches and tea I see her come down her face looks pink and swollen my heart breaks seeing her like that I swallow my lump and look down and continue making her food she goes in front of the tv and watches her cartoons. I place her food on a tray and take it to her she looks at me I move my eyes elsewhere she takes the food and eats watching TV I keep glancing at her when she's done I take her plate and put it in the sink she then walks out the sliding door I sigh I feel my phone vibrate I look at it I see a message it's from Fiona she is confessing her love for me I didn't even finish reading it I just blocked her number I click my tongue annoyed I go to shower when I'm done look for Lilly I find her sleeping on a pool chair under a shade I pick her up and take her to bed I then sit on a chair and look at her sleeping her eyes still look swollen.

The past three days have been nothing but hell for me Lilly doesn't say a word to me she doesn't stay in one room with me for too long the only time she is close to me is when we sleeping even then I have to wait for her to fall asleep first so that I can hold

her she doesn't want me to hold her or be anywhere close to her. Last night I broke down our bedroom door she locked me out and all I could hear is her sobbing behind the closed door it was so painful I just broke down the door I found her on the floor curled up hugging her knees crying that sight still haunts me I've never seen her broken like this I only know my Lilly and the crazy Lilly not this one. I miss her so much I'm not coping at all not receiving her love and affection has my mind all over the place I tried going to work the other day to give her space when I got to work I spend the whole day biting everyone's head off I couldn't concentrate on anything so whoever came my way received all my frustrations by lunch time everyone in the whole building was tense and walking on egg shells around me when I got home I expected to see my happy Lilly ready to feed me and give me love but sad reality hit me hard.

Right now we currently at the mall she asked the guard to take her but I decided to take her and she still hasn't said a word to me I don't know what to do. I'm walking behind her pushing the trolley she

keeps throwing whatever in I'm just looking at how beautiful she is I want to wrap my arms around her stupid boys keep looking at her they want to try their luck the moment they see my face they turn around quickly which is good or someone will definitely die in this shop. As I'm walking behind her she stops and I stop a few feet from her she's busy looking at spices my phone vibrates I pull it out its juice two days ago I told him to feed the Thailands and make sure they clean and nice today I'm killing them I've already send all their children to orphanages I separated them and cleaned all their accounts I opened trust funds for them so when they older they will receive the money to start their lives but obviously they will never find out what happened to their families even if they tried tracing the money back it will point to their parents nothing will come back to me or South Africa as I'm busy standing leaning on the trolley texting Juice I hear some commotion I look up and see Lilly slap some chick so hard she hits the spice shelf and it falls over hitting the next shelf then the next then the next

next I hear a scream I look back at Lilly she has this chick by her hair pulling her I stand straight as I go to her to stop her she kicks her face I see blood and teeth flying then I see its Fiona's face now I know that I'm not going to interfere with this because I'm sure Fiona approached her and said something that pissed her off I go back to the trolley and look at my Lilly do her thing I don't know when and how but Fiona is naked and Lilly is whipping her with something that looks like a white wire Fiona is screaming and kicking around the floor and Lilly is whipping her hard she's not even giving her a chance her body is covered with strip marks some are bleeding people are just looking at Lilly none of them want to come anywhere close to her I don't blame them she looks very scary I look over and see the police walking towards the crowd I go to Lilly and hold her hand as she was about to hit her I take her weapon and she let's me she's breathing heavily looking all sorts of red and has two veins popping on her forehead I pick her up and walk out the mall the security tried to stop me I gave them one deadly look and they moved out

my way I got at the parking I just went to the guards car I don't feel like driving us home so he drives out I pull out my phone and call Biggy.

Biggy: Max.

Me: I just left the mall with Lilly please clear the footage we were never there.

Biggy: what did you do?

Me: hai just do as I say.

Biggy: it's fine I look at the footage myself.

Me: mxm.

I hang up and look over at Lilly who has her head leaning on the window looking outside. I miss my wife I really need to fix this she can not be fight stupid girls because of me hopefully Fiona learned her lesson because next time she will deal with me and when that happens she will definitely die. We walk in and she goes straight up to our room I sigh and follow her I find her undressing then she goes shower I sit on the bed and wait for her. When she comes out she lotions and puts on a baggy shirt.

Me: Lilly

She turns and looks at me now I wish I didn't call her because she looks very intimidating .

Me: I'm sorry.

She just looking at me I feel like she can see my soul.

Me: please say something I cant take the silent treatment its killing me.

I say softly.

Her: what exactly do you want me to say?

Me:.....

Her: you know Max what hurts me about this situation is not the fact that she kissed you it's the fact that I come to realize that my emotions are not valid to you.

My heart breaks.

Me: you my wife Lilly your feelings are valid and you know that.

Her: no I thought I knew that but clearly I was over exaggerating my place in your life. I voiced out my concerns about that friend of yours I told you

exactly how I feel about her and your relationship with her I specifically told you to stay away from her and what did you do?

I just look down ashamed.

Her: not only did you ignore my feelings but you decided to disrespect me by bringing her in our home knowing very well how I feel worse you put her in my kitchen in my apron and cook my food. Max you don't respect me, you don't see me.

Me: I do respect you Lilly yes I was wrong I should've listened and I didn't I'm sorry.

Her: your sorry does nothing for me Max now you gave that girl the power to talk to me like I'm her mate. You gave her the platform to think that she actually has a chance with you. Not once have I ever made another man think he can take your place in my life even Amu knows that but now your friend has the balls to tell me your wife to stay away from you my husband because you gave her that space now I have to fight stupid bimbos in public because you disregard my feelings.

I rub my head frustrated because she's right had I listened to her and put Fiona in her place this wouldn't be happening. I look at her she's standing in front of me. Her thighs look so thick and appetizing Gosh I miss touching her so much.

Me: I will fix it I promise and I'll make sure she moves out the pad.

Her: sorry??

Fuck I close my eyes I never told her that I allowed Fiona to stay in the pad.

Her: you did what??

Me: I'm sorry I didn't tell you I forgot I let her stay at pad because she's looking for a place to stay its was just a temporary thing.

She chuckles shaking her head her eyes change this is not good. She starts pointing at me still chuckling and shaking her head.

Me: Lilly...

She walks out fast I sigh out loud why am I so stupid? I walk out when I get down I see my sports car driving out fast shit shit I run out and jump in

my car I follow her she drives really fast she passes a closed robot fast leaving two cars colliding with each other fuck I move through the cars and take a short cut I know she is going to my pad eventually I get there and find my car parked by the door I run in I take the elevator I feel like it's slow when it opens I'm welcomed by screams coming from my pad for fuck sakes what is she doing to her I try to open the door and its locked I start kicking it in it busts open and she has a sjambok in her hand and Fiona on the floor covered in tears her clothes are torn caused by the sjambok she immediately turns to look at me and I see red she's really going to kill me today is my day I'm dead.

Me: Lilly please let me get her out of here there's no need for this.

Her: oh... so you still want to help her??

Me:....

Eish... she starts walking towards me slowly I take steps back I swear today I'm going to die.

Her: Max.... Remember what I said about getting a woman close to you?

Me: yes I remember.

I hit the wall which is across my door why I'm I so scared.

Her: what did I say?

Me: that you will fuck me up if I allow any woman close to me.

Her: and what did you do?.

Gosh this short person really looks scary

Me: I'm sorry...

I didn't finish that sentence I felt a burning sensation on my arm did she just hit me with her sjambok as I'm trying to process what's going on I feel another one followed by another my anger shots up I grab her hand as she was about to hit me again I look down at.

Me: are you crazy?!

Her: fuck you Max!

I wish she didn't say that I grab both her shoulders and pick her up to my height her face looks all sorts of red.

Her: put me down! This is all your fault!

I shake her then remember she's pregnant I stop then I feel a shooting pain on my balls I let her go immediately and hold my balls groaning in pain she kicked my balls hard as I'm concentrating on my painful balls I feel a stinging pain on my back followed by another she is busy whipping me fuck this is painful I hold the sjambok as she was about to whip me again the pain stings on my hand I stand up and look at her the way I'm so pissed right now if she was someone else I would've killed her in a heartbeat but because it's her I can't do that. I grab her hand and pull her to my chest I can feel her body shaking with anger seeing her like this hurts me because she's right it's all my fault. She's looking up at me.

Me: I'm sorry Lilly ..

I say softly her tears run down her cheeks my chest starts to hurt her anger is replaced by pain I

wipe her tears with my free hand then I gasped as I feel pain on my abdomen.

Her: I'm also sorry.

She says in a shaking voice I look down I see she has her hand holding a knife that is deep into my stomach I see a lot of blood coming out I look back at her. Her eyes look beautiful I bend down to her face I groan as I feel the pain in my stomach but I don't care I kiss her lips softly finally the past few days that's all I've been craving to do just kiss her suddenly I feel like gasping for air I pull out the kiss and look at her she still has her eyes closed with tears coming out I look down and she has pulled out the knife she really wants me dead hey the blood is now coming out fast I slowly drop on my knees she holds me and lays me gently on the floor facing up I look on my side and people are just looking at us shocked I look back at Lilly its difficult breathing if she thinks I'm dying then she has another thing coming because I'm not going anywhere she then kisses my forehead and stands

up walking away I look at her walking away she looks blurry now I close my eyes as I feel drowsy.

I woken up by a beeping sound I try to open my eyes but I'm struggling eventually they open but the light is too bright I blink a couple of times and I look around my eyes move to my doctor who is standing on my side with a tablet his busy touching it his looking down then I remember what happened it all comes back flooding in my brain I close my eyes and sigh Lilly is really crazy its official she's crazy but I still love her and I miss her, her lips were so soft when I kissed her it felt like it was the first time I kiss her. I open my eyes and clear my throat the doctor looks up at me and he comes to remove this oxygen mask.

Me: water..

My throat feels so dry he helps me drink then he does his check up on me which I find annoying.

Doctor: Mr. Ngidi how are you feeling?

Me: like I've been hit by truck. How long have I been here?

Doctor: well three days and when you got here you were stabbed and lost a lot of blood lucky the knife didn't do much damage even though it was pretty deep don't worry you'll live.

Me: okay thank you.

Doctor: you and your wife need to stop meeting with me like this.

I chuckle.

Me: I hear you Doc but we like seeing you.

Doctor: just take me out for lunch when you miss me.

Me: I'll discuss that with my wife.

Doctor: well you healing just fine you might be out of here sooner than I thought let me get you something to eat.

Me: okay thank you again.

Doctor: don't worry about.

He walks out and I lay there thinking about Lilly I hope she comes to see me as I'm lost in my thoughts juice and the rest of the crew walk in I

look at them why are they silent looking at me weirdly.

Me: what??

I ask irritated by their stares then they bust out laughing they continue laughing holding their stomach and crying the nurse walks in with my food looking at them like they are crazy.

Me: don't mind them thank you.

She then walks out slowly looking at them I slowly start eating the food it's so tasteless but I'm hungry so I cant complain. They finally cool down and look at me.

Bozza: I really respect Bozzayam I will never get on her wrong side.

I look at him.

Bozza: don't look at me like that we saw the footage from your old apartment with Bozzayam blessing you with her sjambok.

Me: that's why yall are laughing so much?

Juice: oh... believe me you would also laugh if you saw yourself on the floor getting a beating of your lifetime.

You know Lilly really hurt my ego but I cant be mad about it because it's her. But it's fine I'll just fuck her till kingdom come.

Me: how did I end up here anyway because she left me to die that I know.

Juice: she just called me and told me you got stabbed and I must come take you to the hospital when I got there the paramedics where already there taking you and Fiona left what actually happened that lead you two fighting like that?

I sigh because I know his going to say I told you so. I tell them what happened from Fiona cooking in my kitchen to us driving to my pad by the time I'm done they all mad at me judging by their faces.

Juice: you are stupid Max I told you about that girl of yours I really wish Lilly had stabbed you a couple of times.

Me: yea I know I fucked up I need to get back home to her she cant be by her self with her condition at the moment.

He frowns.

Juice: what condition?

Me: she's pregnant.

They all exclaimed.

Bozza: so you did all this nonsense while she is pregnant?

I nod my head ashamed.

Juice: you the definition of stupid what would've happened had she miscarried because of you.

Now that I think about it fuck I can't hurt her like this I would kill myself if something happened to my winegums because of me.

Bozza: wow Max I didn't expect such from you you really disappointed us.

Me: I'll fix everything I know I fucked up.

Juice: I hope so because she hasn't set a foot here ever since you got admitted and your Fiona also disappeared into thin air.

I sigh when a person disappears into thin air it's never a good sign I know she will come back and it won't be good. Later they leave I told Juice to kill the Thailands since I'm here now and when I leave here I want to fix things with my wife so I don't have time for them and I've held them hostage for too long. Days pass and I just got discharged Juice will be taking me home I haven't seen Lilly I miss her so much my wound has healed but you can see the wound is fresh since the stitches were removed yesterday. Juice arrives and we leave he drops me off and I walk in I see my Lilly wearing my shirt dancing in the kitchen eating and humming a song I smile and walk in slowly I wrap my arm around her and she jumps frightened.

Me: relax it's just me.

I say softly she turns around and kisses me deeply I drop my bag and pick her up she wraps her legs around me I walk to the couch and lay her gently I

feel her hands sneak up under my shirt I get goosebumps from her touch she pulls up my shirt I take off my pants while I'm still kissing her then I tear the shirt she's wearing her boobs look bigger I look at her all I see is lust I want her just as much I don't even want foreplay I get between her thighs my eyes are locked with hers I rub my dick on her very wet minky she opens her legs wider I slide in gently she gasps with tears running down her sides I wrap both my arms around her and bury my head on her neck I start to move slowly as I take in her scent her soft sweet moans drive me crazy I nibble on her neck and make sweet love this is I'm sorry sex it's all about hitting all her right spots so I take my time and give her slow long thrusts her legs shake as she has her third orgasm and I'm still at it we then both come together and I stay inside her I can't put all my weight on her I will crush my winegums so I flip us over and have her on top I'm still inside her. She looks down at my wound and run her finger on it.

Her: I'm sorry

She says with glossy eyes I hold both her hands.

Me: no no MaNgidi I'm the one who is sorry I fucked up badly I made you doubt your place in my heart and you had every right to be hurt and angry so do not apologize for my fuck ups please just please let me work on earning your forgiveness and trust again I promise I will never put you in such a situation ever again.

She just nods her head with tears coming out I wipe them with my hands.

Me: now tell me how are my winegums? I hope you've been playing far from the ice-cream.

I say brushing her cute bump she giggles first and I know she is going to lie to me.

Her: I haven't had ice-cream since I stabbed you.

Me: why are you lying?

She giggles again my heart warms up I haven't see her like this in a while.

Her: what makes you think I'm lying?

Me: you busy giggling and you only do that when you about to lie.

Her: haaa... I don't do that.

Me: okay so tell me when was the last time you had ice-cream?

She giggles

Her: hao I just told...

She stops and makes her weird face she realizes that I'm right about her giggling when she's about to lie she then comes down to my chest I just chuckle she's adorable.

LILLY

Last two months have been busy I went back to work I just started working with Amu shame his so smitten by me it's so cute and sad another thing is he smells bad I cant stand it every time he walks in a room I just walk out I avoid him but that needs to stop because I have to learn a few things from him. Finally Juicy was able to pay lobola for the twins they even did their ceremonies it was just beautiful dad gave them a hard time he really

didn't want them to marry him he said it's just taboo for two sisters to agree to marry one man he hated the idea until the twins told him that if he doesn't do right by them they will just move in with Juicy since they've applied to complete their residency in Joburg and it was approved plus Owami really came through for them when I asked her how did dad change his mind so suddenly she said handcuffs and stripper pole did the trick I couldn't believe she said that I honestly don't want an image of my parents having sex it's disturbing. Truth is daddy is worried about our safety at least he knows Max is capable of taking care of me that's why he didn't give him much of a problem and since he doesn't know Juicy that much plus looking at Juicy you can undermine him because of his character he's a goofy kasi guy even though he has a muscular body he's just too playful but Juicy is just as ruthless as Max you can never say he's an assassin just like dad he actually has much more in common with Juicy than Max, on the other hand Owami is more concerned about our happiness whatever makes us happy she's for it. Two weeks

ago they officially moved in some as Mrs. Juicy and we always go out for dates it's nice having them around at least I get to do girl things plus they spoil me rotten, they did their photoshoot with Alex for the lingerie well I didn't take part in it since I'm pregnant but that inspired her to start a line for pregnant women so I'll be modeling that in a few months Juicy was there for the photoshoot it was fun seeing him cheering on his wives he turned the photoshoot into whatever that was happening in his head it was just cute to watch my sisters were a blushing mess but the photographer managed to get great pictures some were goofy blame it on Juicy he was even in some pictures I don't know how he became the Male model but it worked out pretty nice.

I'm on my way to work with Max since his my driver my bump is bigger but you still can't see it when I'm dressed up plus now I don't wear my tight clothes my dresses are loose and I always have a blazer on but I definitely did put on some weight so Max has taken a decision that I will not take stairs anymore since he says it's too much

pressure on his winegums right now our biggest fight is my high heels and ice-cream I will not stop wearing high heels unless if I have too I'm a short person so I really need the extra height so that people don't look down on me especially these men already gossip about me and Amu is going around the office I'm happy that we both mature enough to not even entertain it. We make it at work and Max comes to open the door for me I step out holding his hand he already has my handbag and laptop bag on his other hand we walk in with people looking at us we get to the elevator and he picks me up I hide my face on his neck with my eyes shut and hold him tightly I feel him walk.

Him: what would you like for lunch today?

Me: your dick.

He chuckles.

Him: anything else?

Me: nando's hot chicken and their garlic rolls.

Him: okay I'll come personally this time since you want my dick as well.

I giggle. I feel him walk and he puts me down I open my eyes and see Kagiso walking out the elevator with that HR lady who hates me I forgot her name they both look at me weirdly I think they were in the elevator with us so they heard our conversation well that's not my problem he walks me to Amu's office he kisses me and leaves well that's how my mornings are like since he doesn't allow me to take the stairs. Few minutes later Amu walks in I close my eyes as I smell him I gag a little I open my eyes his looking at me weirdly. His wife walks in behind him this one I still have to teach her a lesson not to mess with me she puts her hand on him seductively and she kisses him I gag again cant she smell him? He pulls out the kiss and looks at me again I just shake my head and go back to my work.

Amu: Bongiwe I have to work can you please come around lunch time?

Bongiwe: but baby I'll be bored at home you know our son is at daycare.

She whines my God do we really sound like this when we insecure I just zone them out and continue with my work until I smell Amu who is now standing behind me looking at my PC I frown and look at him.

Amu: what's wrong Lilly?

Me: you stink

I say blocking my nose he smells himself frowning.

...: my husband doesn't smell

I turn to look at her I thought she left.

Me: why are you still here again?

I see her breathing heavy I start packing my things I'm not going to work in this smelly office.

Amu: where are you going?

Me: away from you I'm really trying to keep my breakfast down and your stinky self is not helping.

Bongiwe: stop insulting my husband or I put you in the lift again.

I turn and look at her.

Me: I would like to see you try.

I say calmly smiling at her I wish she could come closer plus my hand is itchy.

Amu: Bongiwe stop it! Go home I want to work you disturbing me.

Bongiwe: can you not see she is trying to come between us? She wants you.

Me: huh?

I say with a frown is she insane what will I do with stinky Amu? I just take my things and walk out but Amu stops me.

Me: you really need a shower dude.

Amu: please stay I'll go shower and come back okay.

I nod my head and Bongiwe looks shit angry I don't care. I go back to my desk and Amu leaves dragging angry Bongiwe with him I just continue working Amu comes back and we work great together his really enjoying working with me and I just enjoy getting the knowledge later lunch time comes and my Max walks in looking sexy as ever I

stand up grinning and run into his arms he hugs me tightly swinging me in the air with one hand he puts me down and greets a now grumpy looking Amu who walks out furiously we sit on the couch for a bit then suddenly I crave his dick I just want to lick it I start touching it and brushing it slowly and his getting hard which gets me excited.

Max: eat your lunch my winegums are starving.

Me: stand up.

he stands up right in front of me I start taking off his belt then we hear the door opening I move my head and look behind him its Amu his frozen at the door.

Me: I'm trying to have lunch would you like to sit in and watch me eat?

Max chuckles he is still frozen on the same spot he then walks out. I go back to my meal I put my hand inside his pants and pull out his dick I look at it and drool a little I start to lick the tip like a ice cream cone then I take him in my mouth I hear him groan my heart melts same time I suck him like my life

depends on it eventually he shoots his cum in my throat and I swallow it I take the serviettes and clean him up we than have our lunch over a silly conversation when we done he leaves as his rushing to some meeting I go back to work well Amu never came back and later I went home.

Its been a week now and I've been having an unsettling feeling I keep calling Max every 10 minutes and his really annoyed by me because it's like im paranoid I swear something is going on I keep checking on SamSam on all the gangs just to make sure no one is coming for us but nothing everything looks fine and its frustrating me because I know nothing is fine. Today is Friday and I'm knocking off early Max told me the guards will take me home because he has to attend some meeting with one of his clients I've been restless ever since I walked in this office I called Owami and she prayed over the phone but no man I still feel the same I called the twins and they feel it too. I continue working trying to get my mind off whatever that is going on, later I leave when I get home I go shower and get started on dinner I tried

calling Max and it took me straight to voicemail I took my laptop and start looking at my club and the Numbers company but I cant concentrate I call Max again but it's still the same thing I call Juicy maybe they together but it also takes me to voicemail I try everyone in his gang all their phones are off okay now I'm shit worried I call Zizi. The moment she picks up I just sob over the phone.

Zizi: Entle I'm coming stop crying.

She sounds like she is running it's now around 7PM the door busts open Zizi and Nono walk in still in their work clothes looking like they've been running a marathon.

Nono: Entle what's wrong?

Me: they all disappeared and their trackers have been removed.

I say teary.

Zizi: who are you talking about?

Me: Max and the gang all their phones are off I don't know what to do.

They both freeze looking at me with my tears coming out Nono pulls out her phone and calls who ever.

Nono: fuck!

She says frustrated Zizi sits down slowly with glossy eyes.

Nono: Nthombenhle this is not the time for crying you need to pull yourself together and we have to find them we cant loose our husbands we just got married.

She says looking at crying Zizi and me well Nono has always been the one who motivates us I know she will cry later but now she is the strong one. I wipe my tears because I know she is right.

Me: okay let's do this.

I take my laptop and try to trace them but they all just got kidnapped and disappeared into thin air their trackers are thrown in the last place they were at and they all were at work or meeting with a client I already know it's a set up. Every client they were meetings are from Rome this doesn't

make sense at all what do the Roman want with Max and his gang yes I know he runs Rome but he they've never given him problems before now what is this?.

Zizi: you see this is the time where Owamis trackers come in handy.

I shoot my head at her. I remember Max got one I don't know about juice.

Me: Lucky us Owami gave Max one I don't know if Juicy has his.

Nono: he has it she told me but I forgot to tell Zizi about it.

I open the tracker and it shows that they in North West. I look around the area eventually I manage to get into the cameras of the building they in and looks like an abundant old building but the security is tight honestly it's a good hide out I see the have all of them in a room that has cameras so I think it's their control room then I see her face I cant believe it its stupid Fiona what does she have to do with the Roman's? Anyway I dig deeper into

the past I find that she was sold to one of the Roman's most greedy man and apparently he died of a heart attack and left everything to Fiona who was his wife I can bet my life that she killed him. Now it turns out that she also took over his gang so all those man guarding the building belong to her. What I want to know is why did she take Max and his gang because if she wanted Max she would've taken him alone not everyone. Now I know where they are but getting in is going to be a problem.

Me: I found them.

They both look at me its 2am and we tired.

Nono: okay let's go get them.

Me: that's the problem its not going to be that easy.

Zizi: entle just tell us what are we looking at.

I sigh.

Me: well the place it's an old abundant building the problem is its guarded like a fortress good thing is none of them is hurt everyone looks okay and unharmed but I don't know how long that is going

to last so we need to come up with a solid plan to get them because we cant walk in there guns blazing without a plan we will definitely die within a mile away.

They both sigh.

Zizi: I think it's time we go on our first mission as Khumalo Babies.

Nono: you think we can take them on? Without Owami and dad?

Me: well I think we can they taught us well it's time we spread our wings.

They both look at me and each other.

Nono: okay call them.

Me: Owami and dad can never find out about this.

Zizi: deal.

I take my phone and call Kuhle it rings for a while and he picks up.

Him: did you see the time?.

Me: Kuhle...

I hear him shuffling.

Him: what's wrong Entle? Are the Cubs fine?

That's what they call my babies.

Me: they fine but I need you all here in Johannesburg as in yesterday. Please don't tell Owami and dad about this.

He goes silent for a while.

Him: okay we will be there in a few hours.

Me: thank you.

Him: now get some sleep please you straining our Cubs

I giggle. Then hang up.

Me: okay they will be here in a few hours for now let's sleep there's nothing much we can do.

Nono: okay but you need to eat first you didn't have dinner.

She goes to the kitchen for a while and comes back with the pots we just eat together then later we sleep on my bed they cuddling me in the middle Nono is even brushing my bump from behind Zizis

boobs are just soft if this is how Juicy sleeps then I understand why he married them both this is really nice. I fall asleep immediately.

I'm woken up by noise Zizi and Nono are not in bed I see breakfast on my side my stomach grumbles I sit up and start eating thinking about Max I take my phone and I see his tracker is still green that means his okay I check Juicy and his also good that gives me hope when I'm done eating I get out of bed and start cleaning up I go take a quick shower I wear Max's tracksuits and kicks these people are still making noise I know all the Khumalo babies are here I go down and I find everyone running around in the lounge and kitchen they even made boarders they playing tag I just look at them and smile I swear these ones will never grow up at this age they still play tag screaming and laughing well it is funny because they adults running around jumping my furniture ducking and falling I pull out my phone and take a video of them zizi slips and falls on her ass this one is always falling I don't know if she is clumsy or her feet are just not about

her life we all laugh at her they all turn and look at me.

.....: little one!!

They all scream then run towards me I run back upstairs but Lu grabs me I scream giggling he carries me back down and the tickle me I laugh so much this is not fun I hate it when they do this to me Siyanda has my one Foot Kuhle has the other one they took off my shoes they busy tickling me Lu is holding out my one hand and Lwetho has my other hand Zizi and Nono are working my armpits I laugh while busying wiggling my body so that they can let me go but it's not working I feel myself pee this is embarrassing I start crying they stop immediately:

Ndumiso: Little one what's wrong did we hurt you?

I just cry louder.

Sbusiso: is it the Cubs?

I shake my head crying I don't want to stand up because they will see my mess and I know they will laugh at me.

Kuhle: then what's wrong Nthombi ka Baba?

Me: I peed myself.

I say softly looking down they all silent I look up at them they all looking at me then they bust out laughing my tears come out again I stand up and run up to my room with Zizi and Nono on my tail I just shut the door and lock it. I hear them bagging me to open the door but ignore them and go shower I wear another set of tracksuits then I decide to sleep they gave up knocking on my door thank god Max got it fixed. Later I wake up and I go pee I rinse my mouth and wash my face I go open the door I find all of them sitting on my door with laptops and papers they all look up at me.

Nthando: we are very sorry Nthombi ka Baba Nono explained to us that we cant tickle you like that when you pregnant.

I just look at him.

Nkosi: oh...come on little one you cant be mad at us for too long you know we have work to do.

His right I spend half the day sleeping when I should be looking for my husband.

Me: fine I forgive you but you all know my forgiveness comes at a price.

Kuhle: anything for you.

I smile.

Siyanda: kunle why would you say that? You know very well her favors are not easy.

I pass them they all follow me I go to the kitchen I find cooked food thank god I warm it up and go join them in the lounge.

Ndumiso: okay Entle Zizi and Nono filled us in on what's happening and you were right that place is like a fortress getting in will not be easy.

Me: so were you able to come up with a solid plan?

Luthando: I say we can take them on so let's go in guns blazing.

Siyanda: true but those are not just guards they are trained well so just 11 of us going in will be suicide mission actually 10 of us because Entle cant be on the field.

I frown his crazy I'm going to get my man and he wont stop me. Then I see Hlehle standing behind Siyanda.

Hlehle: you can go take him it's okay I'll protect the babies plus you have the Ngidi ancestors protecting you as well so I'm giving you the green light.

Me: are you sure?

Hlehle: yes Entle I'll be there with you like the last time.

Me: okay thank you.

Hlehle: but yall need to hurry up you running out of time. I'm trying to keep them safe but that woman is going to kill them and take Max so stop playing around

She disappeared then I realize they looking at me weirdly.

Zizi: was that Hlehle?

Me: yes

Siyanda: who is that?

Nono: her dead twin.

I told Zizi and Nono about Nobuhle and they cool with her.

Kuhle: I don't understand.

Zizi explains everything to them and they just shocked.

Me: guys we don't have time we need to start moving at least tonight we should have a plan and go get them Hlehle said we running out of time.

Zizi: okay can I have their organs we need them.

We all look at her weirdly then it clicks.

Me: are you two the Blue twins?

Zizi and Nono look at each other then back at me.

Zizi&Nono: Huh?

They both say with high voices I cant believe it why didn't I see it? The Blue twins are underworld

doctors not just any doctors but they perform major surgeries legal and illegal ones and sell organs and illegal drugs/medications on the black market no one knows them or have even seen them I don't know how exactly they get clients but apparently they just send you a location and I don't know but they take you and fix you then bring you back when you healthy and fine.

Me: don't HuH me it's you two now everything makes sense.

Nkosi: okay since we taking out secrets I'm Stones.

Fuck no! We all exclaimed. Well Stones is a jewelry thief any diamond, gold, Pearl's etc. you name it he has it not only does he steal jewelry but he also sells it obviously I'm talking expensive pieces. He even has successful jewelry company called Stones where he supplies jewelry shops with materials they need.

Me: wow.

Kuhle: I'm Silence.

We all turn to look at him with jaws dropped honestly I'm not surprised by this one his always been into snipers and his a professional sniper well the name comes from how he kills its clean and you never expect it and he never misses all his targets died with one bullet between their eyes basically his a contract killer if you looking for fast clean and untraceable his your guy.

Siyanda: okay the rest of us are the KK Table

Zizi: wait ... you mean you, ndumiso, sbusiso, Luthando, Nthando and Lusanda are thee KK Table?

Ndumiso: yes.

Well the KK Table are a gang or let's say a group or members I don't know what to call them but they don't do small crimes they steal very expensive things cars, gold, ships, trucks airplanes etc. basically they slowly taking over and most gangs are looking for them they either want to sit on the Table or they really want to take them out since some now answer to them this is just wow I never knew my siblings are this busy.

Nthando: and you Entle what's your story?

Me: huh?

I say with my high pitch voice.

Siyanda: hai Nthombi ka Baba we all know here you've been busy but we want to know with what exactly.

Zizi: I say she's a IT guru I've seen her work.

Nono: I agree with you plus Owami taught her how to work the PC well.

Kuhle: nope I think she's using IT to her advantage she's something else.

They all looking at me with their aliens eyes its creepy.

Me: would you all stop you going to give me nightmares.

Sbusiso: then tell us.

Me: fine how about I show you.

I stand up they follow me I go to Max's office his desk has this button I installed when I press it it opens a secret door behind the shelf then it has to

scan my hand and eyes then it opens we walk in and you welcomed by a wall covered by screens and there are three laptops connected to them it looks like high tech shit in here on the other wall is my knives placed nicely I go sit in front of the laptops and switch on one and it automatically opens the other.

SamSam: welcome Madusa.

They all scream shouting different things in excitement I giggle looking at them.

Siyanda: do you know how long we've been looking for you?

Me: well I couldn't work with people I don't know and when I tried to look for KK Table you guys are literally ghosts so I didn't trust you.

Kuhle: truth is I'm not surprised it all makes sense you love numbers and you a business guru your work is amazing.

Me: thank you.

Nono: okay guys now that introductions are done can we get back to business.

We all work in Max's office plan is we all going to take them on head on Owami always taught us that we must face our enemies and never sneak up on them I called Lolo to get me about 20 man and 10 snipers lucky the place is covered by trees so they can work with that the rest of us are going in from the front I told them that Hlehle gave me the go ahead they were not happy at first but they finally agreed.

Me: we need cars.

Ndumiso: I can supply that.

Zizi: Now that I know you part of the KK Table I want Ferrari.

Me: Lamborghini.

Nono: Audi A8.

Kuhle: a military tank.

We all turn to look at him.

Kuhle: what??

Siyanda: this is not fast and the furious you all will be driving GTis.

We all complain.

Nono: Siya please don't bore us I'm not going on my first mission with a GTi.

Nkosi: there's nothing wrong with a GTi I don't mind it.

Zizi: yea you can have a GTi but I want a Ferrari.

Siya: no you guys....

Nthando: well I'm with Nono on this one if we going on our first mission as Khumalo babies then we have to go in style. I want a Bugatti by the way.

Siyanda: do you know how much are those cars?

Me: okay Siya you drive a Toyota and let the rest of us enjoy the benefit of having brothers who are KK Table please.

Zizi: Thank you little one.

Ndumiso: okay fine I will have the cars delivered at North West we leaving tonight.

Siya: you all do know that they will see us coming yall like attention.

Lu: well I'm sure they expecting someone to come save them so sneaking around is not happening.

We discuss the details of how we going to take them on then we later leave for North West we arrive at the bnb we all rest my men are here too so tomorrow I'm go to get my husband.

I slept between Nono and Zizi since we sharing a room and now we just finished showering we wearing Owamis bullet proof suites honestly we look sexy I strip on my knives around my waist and thighs I took my bow and arrows today I'm not going to fight using guns but Nono and Zizi are strapped with bullets and their favorite guns we walk out and find the guys in the lounge all dressed in black military boots and pants and black shirts I'm sure they wearing their suits underneath. They all look the same if you don't know you would think they are clones even though they have different hairstyles they still look like one person . The moment they see us they start to whistle making us blush you can actually see my very visible bump in this but I still look

sexy. It's around 10am and yes we are doing this day light Sbusiso made sure that police officers don't come through no matter what happens there Kuhle helps me put on my arrows he ties the bag behind my back this is for me to reach for an arrow from my shoulder without any problems even if I get into a fistfight they will not fall over that's how good the bag is designed. Eventually we walk out and all the cars we asked for are parked nicely even though they all black I don't care I get the Lamborghini I asked for even the Tank is here I don't know how Ndumiso pulled this off but he really came through the rest of the guys will be driving GTis but not the Khumalo babies honestly I'm too excited we gather around Lu says a small prayer him and Nkosi will be our eyes and ears so they will be hiding somewhere with their computers. Lu gives us ear pieces we put them on.

Nkosi: please don't fuck up this mission I'll be recording it for memories.

I see Hlehle standing next to Kuhle he shivers a little I smile at her she nods her head I know we

ready to go. We all walk to our different cars Kühle will be with the snipers I'll be going in with Nono and Zizi I think Hlehle too since she is sitting quietly on the passenger seat which I don't understand.

Me: hlehle I don't think ghosts travel using cars.

Her: and how do you know that?

Me: when have you seen a ghost sitting in the front seat singing and dancing?

Her: I'm a special ghost.

Me: sure you are.

Her: what's that supposed to mean?

Me: nothing twini.

Why doesn't she fly there like she usually does?
You now what its none of my business.

Ndumiso: Entle are you talking to yourself.

Zizi: no dumb dumb she's talking to Hlehle.

Siyanda: you riding with your ghost sister?

Nthando: God this family is so weird.

Kuhle: can yall shut up.

Siyanda: no like seriously I've heard about those beautiful ghosts who ask truck drivers for lifts is it like that little one?

Me: I'm not going to justify that with an answer.

They carry on arguing about Hlehle and whatever until we get close to the destination.

Me: okay enough you guys let's do this.

Kuhle: all snipers are set.

Lu: I got you.

Nkosi: okay on my count snipers you can hit.

Kuhle: count Khumalo baby.

Nkosi: don't call me baby.

Kuhle: baby.

Nkosi: Thandokuhle I will fu....

Me: count man!

Everyone chuckles. Gosh these two can go on forever.

Nkosi: hai Nthombenhle who you talking to like that?

Everyone now is screaming in my ear piece.

Nkosi: okay fine fine geeez yall will break my ear.

Siyanda: would you just count for fuck sakes.

Nkosi: don't swear at me.

All: count!!

Then he laughs I'm starting to think this is a mistake even Hlehle is laughing next to me I don't know at what because she doesn't have a earpiece.

Hlehle: I'm a ghost I don't need a earpiece I can hear everything.

Me: why are you listening to my thoughts?

Ndumiso: huh?

Sbusiso: what?

They all say at the same time.

Me: I'm not talking to you.

Zizi: gosh this mission is going to be fucked.

Lu: can yall shut it for a moment please.

We all mumbles whatever.

Nkosi: okay Kuhle you ready?

Kuhle: I've been ready.

Nkosi: why don't you just say yes like a normal person?

I roll my eyes.

Kuhle: god Thandowenkosi just count for heaven sake.

Nkosi: okay fine. In 3.....2....1.

Well since we on the street its still quiet we cant see what's happening until we get to the building.

Nono: what happened?

Lu: they just made it rain that's what happened. Now yall need to hurry most of their guys are inside the building everyone outside is out.

We make it at the gate and I see Kuhles tank parked there.

Me: kuhle please tell me here why did you drive here with this tank if you going to be up there on the trees.

Kuhle: for style little one when I saw it on fast and furious it looked cool I wanted to try it out maybe I might use it I don't know.

Siyanda: wow so we wasted money for you to experience your fantasy? Do know the administration that goes in to getting that thing here?

Kuhle: siyanda you a bore you don't have fantasies so you will never understand.

His right Siyanda is a bore his always cautious and doing things on the safe side.

Zizi: we need to take him to bungee jumping just to loosen up.

Sbusiso: and a kinky strip club.

We all agree. We make it at the gate and the building is covered with dead bodies well it's their guards.

Lu: guys I just connected you to their speakers so they will be able to hear everything you say inside.

Nono: perfect plus I feel like singing.

We step out the cars I have my bow on my hand Nono is standing on my right and Zizi is on my left. The guys step out and we standing there just looking at the building.

MAX

I can't believe my whole crew has been kidnapped me the mighty Max and my gang have been kidnapped by Fiona a whole Fiona that just pisses me off. Her reason is that when she came back to South Africa it was be with me so that we can combine gangs and be the power couple but unfortunately I'm married so her plan changed to her seducing me and falling pregnant then I leave Lilly for her I literally laughed at her when she said that. Now that didn't work out she kidnapped me and my gang well according to her she is going to kill my gang then inject me with some drug that is going to wipe my memory for the past three years so that I can love her and marry her this girl is delusional. I'm more worried about my gang yes I know we can take her on but her man are too many they would kill my guys and I cant have that

so I had to stay put and pray that Lilly makes a plan I know she is going to come here with her crazy especially if she finds out that its Fiona. We've been tied to our chairs in their control room so we looking at these screens which are cameras inside and outside the building I noticed it's a old building but I cant tell if we in still in South Africa or not because its covered by trees. The two guys who watch I guess is the security they keep their eyes on the screens and report to whoever are just playing cards here not even watching what's going on as I'm looking at the screens lost in my thoughts I see all the men walking around with guns drop on the floor like flies I smile because I know that means my Lilly came to get me I turn on my side and juice has his head down I don't blame him we haven't had food or water since we got here so we feel a bit weak. I nudge him with my elbow he looks at me I indicate with my head to look at the screens he looks then we start hearing voices through the speakers that's when the security looks at the screen I think she came with all the Khumalo babies. The moment she stepped out that

Lamborghini my dick jerked a little then I see her sisters they dressed in black jumpsuits with kicks then I see their brothers but I'm worried about my winegums.

Lilly: I feel like Charlie's Angel's with you two beside me

She says through the speakers they all laugh I chuckle I see my gang is now up they also chuckle listening to them Fiona walks in the door fuming with anger she starts shouting at her man in a foreign language.

Ndumiso: you ready to go play.

Zizi: yes I miss my husband I'm horny as fuck.

The brothers complain they so loud.

Nthando: enough.

Nono: let's go.

Lilly: All my girls at the party, look at that body

Shakin' that thing like you never did see

Got a nice package alright

Guess I'm gonna have to ride it tonight

All my girls at the party, look at that body
Shakin' that thing like you never did see
Got a nice package alright
Edit; four, three, two, one

Kuhle: is that Janet Jackson?

Zizi: say baby.

Lu: I got you little one.

Nkosi: don't forget to have some fun babies.

Next thing the song starts playing through the speakers then I see the girls walking in like they in a music video in my entire life I've never seen such a rescue mission we might as well just die here they even singing along I chuckle in disbelief. I see Lilly pull something over her shoulder is that her bow and arrow?? What are we in? Game of thrones? She keeps shooting and people dropping before they can pull the trigger.

Fiona: I'm going to kill this bitch.

She says angrily looking at the screens the Khumalo babies are just all over the screens some

are even dancing a part of me just wants to join them they really having the time of their life. I look at the other screen I see one of her sisters fighting some two guys she's as good as Lilly now I think Terminator was raising a small army here.

Lilly: did you just shoot me!?

She screams at whoever I jump on my chair as my heart drops immediately she cant be shot.

Lilly: I'm pregnant you idiot! What is wrong with you!

She screams again the guy is just frozen and Lilly looks fine wait now I'm confused she then attacks the guy with her knives.

Kuhle: Nthombenhle!? You good?

Lilly: yes I'm fine.

Sbusiso: the cubs?

Lilly: perfectly strong.

I smile that's my Lilly. She then runs into another room she starts using her arrows again honestly

I'm watching a movie here starring Khumalo babies.

Nono: Lu where the fuck is my husband?

Lu: hai Nolwazi watch your tone.

Zizi: Luthando I want my husband talk man.

I look over Juicy he looks amused I think his blushing. Fiona is busy barking orders on her phone frustrated.

Nkosi: will you two relax they all enjoying the movie so give me more. Give me more!

We chuckle this is just entertaining I even forgot I'm kidnapped. We relax watching them busy doing their thing the song changes to Cardi b up.

Siyanda: Lu what is this? A twerk song?

Nkosi: shake that booty baby.

Siyanda: you will shit yourself.

Nono: shake what your mama gave you baby remember my husband is watching.

They all laugh then the door busts open its one of her brothers he shots the security and looks at Fiona for a while.

Him: Fiona?

Lilly: you found her??

Him: I think so she's just staring at me I think she's going to pee her pants.

Nono: like someone we know.

They bust out laughing okay that's an inside joke. Then I hear Lilly sniff.

Kuhle: little one are you crying?

She doesn't answer them she's just busy fighting people I'm scared she might have hurt herself and my winegums maybe that's why she's crying.

Nono: Nthombi ka Baba we sorry it's too soon.

Lilly: mxm

She says sniffing

Lilly: Ndu please keep Fiona safe for me where is Max?

Ndumiso: oh...sorry they all here I forgot about them.

Zizi: you not serious wena I'm sure they tied up let them free.

Ndumiso: Eish sorry man it's just Sbu ndoda stocko my guy.

Sbusiso: say no more I'm coming.

Siyanda: hai you two this is not the time for your threesome

What is wrong with these boys?

Sbusiso: oh... come on Siya what's a movie with no little romance?

Siyanda: No man why are you always horny?

Ndumiso: hao Siya a little Bold and the Beautiful.

Siyanda: I just said no.

Ndumiso: oh....come on Siya all I need to do is band her over one good round before she dies I'll be quick quick fast I promise.

I look over at Fiona and she looks frightened she's even frozen on her spot.

Sbusiso: I'm sure the guys there would appreciate the porn.

What no we don't want to see that. Next thing my baby mama walks in looking all sorts of yummy with her baby bump and her bow on her hand she she throws her knives at Fiona so fast they all land on her legs she screams in pain and drops on the floor. She then turns and runs to me she removes the tape on my mouths and kisses me I probably smell like shit.

Me: please untie me.

Nono: oh my God ndumiso they still tied what exactly are you doing there?

He immediately starts helping Lilly untie us.

Ndumiso: hai Nthombenhle just stabbed my meal.

Sbu: hai she's always been violent that one.

Eventually they help us out the building they took us to their bnb Lilly has not left my side she help me get cleaned up and feed me and now we cuddling with her holding on me for dear life.

Me: I'm sorry I left you I could feel your hurt sometimes.

Her: Its not your fault I was just trying to keep calm for the sake of your winegums and they didn't give me problems.

Me: I'm happy you all okay you scared me when I thought that guy shot you.

Her: he did shoot me twice but luckily I was wearing Owamis bulletproof suit so it just felt like he poked me.

Me: I thought he missed actually those jumpsuits are bulletproof?

Her: yeah Owami made them she actually made it for my dad at first but then he made for his crew and when we were doing our training we also got.

Me: wow... your mom is amazing.

Her: I know hey she is like superwoman or something.

We spent the night talking nonsense and making love. I didn't even ask about what happened to

Fiona but I know her brothers probably took care of it.

JUICE

It's been a few weeks since we got kidnapped by Max's side chick that was really a wake up call for us it shows we've been too relaxed what surprised me was my wives yes I knew that they able to fight obviously but that was the first time I see them in action sexy is an understatement. We currently chilling in Max's private jet I'm sitting across Max and Lilly who is clinging on him her bump is now visible when she is standing straight my wives are in the back finishing their assignments. We on our way to KZN my sister is having her memulo and my wives have to assist her with her preparations, Mbali just loves being around my wives and they love her too they always video calling each other even Themba he says they buy him nice things and they hot so he likes bragging about them at school but I just love how they've created a bond amongst themselves. I'm trying to go through my emails and work on my laptop but my eyes keep moving

to Max and Lilly he has his eyes closed facing up and his hand gently brushing her bump as she is asleep on his chest I really envy them I would love to go through the experience of having one of my wives pregnant even if it's both of them but starting a family is something we need to discuss because our marriage is still new and they both in school I don't want to add too much on their plate but I would love to start a family with them they would make wonderful mothers.

Eventually we make it home I asked Mbali to prepare a room for Max and Lilly since Lilly will also be helping but Max is keeping a close eye on her I know she will not work that much he treats her like an egg. We drive home when I get to my street you can tell that some of my family members are here I don't know if I should be excited or not because I know some of my dad's sisters are really rude and mean they don't like us or my mother they always have something negative to say. I park by the gate and Max parks behind me I jump out then open the doors for my wives they already dressed in their makoti attire

they look beautiful I go get their bags from the boot Lilly walks to her sisters and they busy giggling about whatever I see Themba running out the gate he goes straight to my wives and hugs them he literally ran past me to my wives you know what it's fine. I turn and see some of my cousins standing outside looking at us.

Max: and than?

He asks pointing at my cousins standing there looking at us.

Me: just know it's going to be a long week of nonsense.

He just shakes his head and follows me as we dragging these bags what do woman pack in these things? I know my wives could just pack one bag because they share everything but no I'm here dragging three big bags and a small one I know that one is mine we pass my cousins and greet them I hear them mumble their greetings the girls are looking at Max like a piece of meat I chuckle shaking my head I look at Max and he also noticed the moment we walk into the kitchen its flooded

with Mbali and her friends she comes running at me I hug her she greets Max.

Mbali: where are my sisters?

She's talking about my wives.

Me: so you not going to ask me how am I?

Mbali: I can see you fine you know what let me go outside.

She says walking out more like running I turn and find her friends looking at me and Max drooling what exactly is happening today? My eyes land on my ex Amanda she blushes looking down I frown and walk away I show Max where he will be sleeping I go to my room and put the bags then walk out to go look for my mom I find her serving tea to her in laws the moment she sees me she smiles I walk to her and hug her and kiss her chick.

Me: How are you Ndlovukasi?

She blushes that's what my dad calls her whenever he wants to soften her.

Mom: I'm okay have you seen your dad?

Me: not yet I just got here.

1aunt: so you don't greet us? Or we not visible?

I turn and look at them.

Me: I was going to greet you after I'm done greeting my mom but since your forward im sure you will do fine without my greeting.

Mom: Nhlanhla no.

I look down at my mom I kiss her chick and whisper that I'll see her later as I let her go I hear my wives greet respectfully they mumble whatever at them mxm my mom goes and hugs them tightly she hugs Lilly and telling her how pregnancy looks good on her and she's a blushing mess it's cute I look at my wives and wink at them they blush I go kiss them and walk out. I bump into Max and I pull him we walkout the back door the last thing I need is to see girls drooling over us that shit is awkward. I find all the men at the back braaiing meat my dad immediately starts dancing I pull out my stack of cash I start making it rain my uncles join him Max also pulls out a stack we make

it rain for them they even singing man I love my uncles when they done dad comes to hug me and they pick up their money my uncle pass us the beer they know Max as he worked closely with them during the lobola negotiations. We chill and catch up I honestly don't understand how they got married to their evil wives when I was growing up and always in trouble they rejoiced in seeing my mom cry and suffer whenever my dad asked them for help when we were struggling they shut him out but now they find it hard to see us doing well all they do is judge and keep reminding my mom that I'm a criminal sometimes I see it breaks her heart but she doesn't say and the last time I checked they don't like my wives they kept calling them jozi wives and that they lazy and gold diggers until my wives did their duties so well that they had nothing else to say but call them gold diggers if only they knew. My uncles know that my wives come from money because when they went to their home they didn't believe the cars and house they saw but they were mostly impressed at how humble they are because till today my aunts still

think my wives are gold diggers. When we done braaiing I take the meat inside and find my wives cooking, Lilly sitting on high chair making a salad Mbali talking too much Amanda drinking whatever in a mug and two other girls I don't know. Amanda looks at me and smiles widely I just ignore her and put the meat next to Nono who is chopping onions I kiss her neck she thanks me for the meat I go to Zizi who is cooking pap I kiss her neck too and she giggles I smile and kiss her again.

Zizi: aha.... Nhlanhla man please stop.

Me: I like hearing you giggle

I whisper in her ear and bite her gently she giggles again. I let her go and find Max clinging on Lilly whispering sweet things because her face looks all sorts of red I knew he can never stay away from her for too long. One of my aunts walks in and looks at us we look at her. She smiles when her eyes land on Amanda.

Aunt: hello Makoti I'm happy to see you, where have you been?

Amanda is blush looking down. Lilly is looking at her making a face she then looks at me for a while then she chuckles shaking her head I guess she just figured out what is happening.

Amanda: I've been here ma and it's nice to see you too.

Aunt: you should come more often you know you our makoti Nhlanhla can still take you as a wife you would make such a better wife.

Nono stops chopping immediately and looks at Amanda who looks at me and blushes Zizi is now next to me also looking at Amanda same as Lilly now this kitchen feels very small. I look at Max who is looking at me I indicate that we should go now we walk out quickly the moment we get outside I breathe out I didn't even realize I was holding it in.

Max: juice what was that about?

I sigh.

Me: that is Amanda my ex since I was in high school she was like my ride or die she loves bad

boys long story cut short when I meet you and moved to joburg she started fucking around when I got back we fucked and weeks later when I was in joburg she claimed to be pregnant I told my dad about it but then I started hearing rumors about her going around eventually I confronted her and she denied everything two days later she had a miscarriage only to find out she had a abortion because the baby was not mine and that I found out when she was confessing to her friend they didn't see me I overheard their conversation so I was kind of hurt as I was looking forward to having a baby I just left KZN and came to joburg and never looked back until years back when I came back to fix the house I saw her and she tried talking to me but I didn't entertain her then I met my wives so I don't know how my aunt even knows her because my mom just knows her as Mbalis friend which is also shocking because I didn't know they friends.

Max sighs.

Max: with your aunt and Amanda shit is going to hit the fan believe me you don't want your family to see your wives crazy it will not end well for them I suggest you put them in their place fast.

Me: my wives crazy??

Okay I'm confused. He looks at me for a while and chuckles.

Max: I remember looking like you when Godfather told me to look out for Lilly's crazy and learn to tame her or she will go wild. Clearly you have not seen the Khumalo crazy and if your aunts and your ex don't tread carefully around your wives you going to see a movie.

Me: Max you scaring me are trying to say my wives are psychotic or bipolar?

He laughs.

Max: no they not that kind of crazy their crazy is triggered by anger and they get very impulsive and creative you know what let me not tell you. Just wait and see I'm seriously going to enjoy this week.

He then whistle walking away I run after him because now I'm worried and super confused.

Me: Max wait!.. can you tell me what you mean.

Max: I mean my family has seen Lilly use a gun and throw her tinny fits around.

Me: Fuck man Max I'm shit confused and you not helping.

He smiles at me and pat my shoulder.

Max: don't worry soon you will understand I just pray you can handle them because trying to control one Khumalo baby is mission impossible but I trust you.

What?? Now I don't know if I should be worried I don't even know what I should be worried about maybe I should talk to Lilly I know she will tell me what's up.

We now sitting at the dinner table Nono is fixing my plate I don't know why is Amanda still here because Mbalis friends have left already she is sitting across from me on my other side its Zizi and next to her its Lilly then Max. Next to Amanda it's

my aunts. Nono puts the plate in front of me I thank her she sits Lilly places a plat in front of Max my mom says a prayer I decide to open my eyes I don't know why but I find my wives and Lilly looking at Amanda and my aunts their aura feels very dark Amanda opens her eyes I think she felt that someone is looking at her she looks frightened when she finds eyes on her she moves uncomfortably on her chair I look at my wives they just close their eyes and I see Lilly wink at Amanda while smirking she then closes her eyes okay that shit is scary as fuck I hear my mom say amen they open their eyes and start eating like nothing happened I look at my wives they just keep eating unbothered.

Mom: Nhlanhla are your okay?

My wives look at me I look at my mom.

Me: yes I'm okay ma.

Dad: you haven't touched your food you sure you okay?

I was about to answer when I got interrupted.

Aunt: maybe his thinking about the next crime his going to commit.

I look at her I hear my wives chuckle I look at them and they just eating their food I see Lilly also eating unbothered Max looks at me and smiles.

Mom: Vuyi please stop this is not the time.

Aunt: stop what? Telling the truth? That you failed to raise your children? Now he bought us white people in this family when he should've married Amanda the mother of his child.

My wives shoot their heads up immediately and look at me for a while.

Me: Aunt Vuyi what child are you talking about?

A Vuyi: you see? You not even ashamed you left her pregnant she had a miscarriage because of stress you brought for her while you were busy running around after your gold diggers you call wives she was alone.

I chuckle.

Me: is that what she told you?

I look at Amanda who is now looking down I look at my dad and he looks disappointed at me I push my chair back and stand up. I take my wives hands.

Me: let's go sleep.

They stand and follow me they moment I close the door Zizi looks at me with tears running down her cheeks now I understand why Max hates seeing Lilly cry. I look at Nono who is completely ignoring us as she undresses I pull Zizi into my arms and I wipe her tears as I feel my heart break.

Me: stop crying I will explain everything okay

She just nods her head I undress her and also strip we get into bed I pull them both to my chest.

Me: Amanda is my ex more like a high school sweetheart....

I explain everything to them about my relationship with her from how it started and to how it ended. By the time I'm done they looked relieved.

Nono: so why is she here then?

Me: honestly I don't know I'm even shocked that she is Mbalis friend I haven't seen her in years.

Zizi: well Aunt Vuyi insisted she stays for dinner I guess she told your family a different story when you left for joburg.

Nono: clearly because you never explained to your dad what happened you just left I'm sure they went and try to fix things on your behalf.

Me: you right I will talk to my dad tomorrow and explain everything.

Zizi: gosh I can believe this chick is so desperate.

We spend the night talking about silly things eventually we fall asleep. I wake up and none of my wives are next to me I get out bed and go shower when I'm done I fix the bed and go down when I get there everyone is already at the table my wives keep bringing food to the table I greet everyone and sit Zizi comes and sits next to me I kiss her and greet her Nono comes with the last bowl she bands and kisses me and start to fix my plate when she's done she settles down and Zizi passes her plate of

food my aunts and cousins keep looking at us but we just ignore them. After breakfast my dad calls me to the garden when I get there I find him with my uncles I sit down he then clears his throat.

Dad: Nhlanhla me and your uncles wanted to talk to you about Amanda and her pregnancy. I don't know what happened between you two but last time you told me she is pregnant and you wanted to do right by the child next thing you disappeared and you were no where to be found. Few days later she came with her family to make demands about you marrying her I called your uncles here and your aunts also thought it's best we pay lobola for her but I refused because I couldn't make such decisions for you when you not present. She did tell us she miscarried and she couldn't get a hold of you I'm not going to lie I'm disappointed at how you left but I want to hear your side because I know you, you my son I know you would never leave your child like that especially after asking me to help you when her family comes to ask for damages.

I'm happy my dad didn't do anything without me I'm fucked up annoyed by Amanda and her stupid lies. I start to tell them what happened between Amanda and I by the time I'm done my dad and uncles look pissed and annoyed.

Uncle 1: imagine had I listened to my wife and paid damages and lobola for such nonsense.

He says pissed.

Uncle 2: it's a good thing your parents stood up for you because now we would be trying to fix this.

Dad: why was she even here?

I shrugged my shoulders.

Uncle 2: I think she came to get you back.

I chuckle shaking my head.

Me: hai uncle I don't want her I'm perfectly fine with my wives.

Later Max comes to join us we get called for lunch and Amanda is back my wives and Lilly keep looking at her with their funny faces and my aunt keeps making stupid comments but luckily my

wives are not offended at all. It's now afternoon and everyone is watching the sunset and kids are playing in the garden it's just beautiful I see my wives and Lilly sitting under a tree eating some fruits my dad is braaiing meat again well that is just snack we just having beers discussing the cow and some thing that we need to get done tomorrow for Mbalis memulo next we hear some commotion I look up and don't see my wives and Lilly Max stands up immediately to go look for Lilly I follow him we find them at the other side of the house. I see Amanda slap Zizi and Zizi returns it with a fist I was about to go to them and Max gabs my hand to stop me. When Amanda is done stumbling she charges to Zizi with so much anger Zizi just kicks her on her chest and she stumbles back as she is about to fall but Nono catches her and push her back to Zizi who throws her another hard punch that send her to the floor I don't know where Lilly comes from but she kicks Amanda's face and its lights out I see Max going to her and he scoops her into his arms and walks away my wives also walk away leaving me and my dad and uncles

shocked. I follow them and when we get into the house I find Max and Lilly arguing and my wives just looking at them.

Max: did you forget that you pregnant Lilly?

Lilly: so?

Max: so? I thought we spoke about you getting into fights do you want to get hurt? Or hurt my kids?

Lilly: that was not even a fight I just kicked her and that's it.

Max sighs defeated.

Max: no more ice cream for you until you know how to behave.

Lilly: you wouldn't dare.

She says in a shaky voice. I think she is going to cry.

Max: watch me.

Lilly just walks out stumping her feet on the floor with her lips pouted looking like a 5 year old throwing a tantrum. Max sighs looking frustrated and my wives are busy giggling I turn and look at them with a serious face they look back at me with

their beautiful blue eyes they look so innocent right now they even smiling showing off their dimples we have a stare contest as I'm try understand how they just carry on living life like they didn't hit poor Amanda well I'm not defending her but for them to do this in their in laws home and still be okay with it just confuses me. We still staring at each other these two really like challenging me then they start giggling and doing their weird stupid funny dance because they know it gets me all the time I smile and they just continue making their funny faces I shake my head chuckling we get interrupted by aunt Vuyi and her buddies which are my other aunts since they like to follow her around she's the leader of the pack I guess.

Aunt v: yeeey you stupid girls!

She shouts at the top of her voice my wives stop dancing and turn to look at her with frowns on their faces. My cousins come in running as they hear her noise.

Aunt v: you two come here with straat mate tendencies...

I interrupt her.

Me: aunt Vuyi please watch how you speak to my wives. You will not raise your voice at them like they your kids.

Aunt v: wena you piece of shit will not tell me what to do in my brothers house!

Zizi: I dare you to call my husband a piece of shit again.

Her voice sound rusty and deeper I look down at her and I see a vein popping. They both standing beside me. I look back at my aunts and you can see that they some expect that normally they just ignore her when she talks like this but I guess they tired of her.

Cousin 1: yeey!!...don't talk my mother like that she is not your friend!

We turn to look at her, this one is aunt Vuyi first born Thembi she's just like her mother always in

other people's business and starting unnecessary drama.

Me: sorry?

I say calmly looking at her I guess my face intimidates her because she starts stuttering.

Auntie v: yeeey!.... you will not scare my daughter with that criminal face of yours. My brother did your mother a favor by marrying he....

She didn't finish that sentence as I saw a bowl of fruits fly right at her face all the bananas and apples hit her Zizi threw it at her I see Thembi charge to Zizi but she didn't make it as Nono jumped at her and started to throw fists at her. Aunt Vuyi walks fast to get Nono off Thembi but she doesn't make it as Zizi put her foot forward and it tripped her she fell hard face down I think I saw her teeth on the floor the other cousins run to Nono I quickly grab Nono from behind and pull her back big mistake she starts kicking anyone in front of her everything is just a mess everyone is either on the floor or flying across the room next thing

we hear a gun shot we all freeze I turn and find Zizi with a gun pointing at the ceiling.

Zizi: opppsss!

She says sweetly giggling covering her mouth. I look at her in disbelief.

.....: what the fuck is going on in my house!

We turn and find dad standing with my uncles shocked at this scene well I don't blame them. Zizi hides the gun behind herself I see Max at the corner looking amused with Lilly I think I now understand the crazy he was talking about.

Well after that scene my dad decided that everything will be discussed tomorrow morning since everyone's emotions are high we didn't even have dinner we all ate separately my dad looked so pissed if it wasn't for my mom I'm sure he would've chased everyone out. I'm sitting outside having a cigarette I still can not believe Nono and Zizi I always thought Max let's Lilly get away way with a lot of things maybe because he fears her or something but today I just saw that Khumalo

babies are just crazy people how the fuck I'm I going to tame two crazy woman? Max is trying with Lilly but now I have double the trouble I just cant. I walk back inside I find Max sitting on a high chair looking depressed .

Me: and then? What's your problem?

Max: take a good guess.

Me: Lilly?

He nods his head while brushing it I chuckle.

Max: you I'm going to grow grey because of her.

Me: what did you do now?

Max: why do you assume it's me?

Me: because it's always your fault.

Max: mxm

Me: you know what I don't want to know I'm go to bed I miss my wives.

He chuckles

Max: uhmhhh...

I look at him and I can see his hiding something I choose to walk away I'm not going to deal with Max. I get to my room and open the door I switch on the light I see three people in my bed. Nono raises her head and looks at me.

Me: why is Lilly in my bed?

Nono: shhhhh.

I frown.

Me: don't shush me. I want to sleep with my wives.

Nono: well not today go sleep with Max.

Me: like hell I will!

Nono: would you keep it down cant you see they sleeping?

She whispers again.

Me: why is she not sleeping with her husband.

Nono: because her husband refused to give her ice cream.

Me: how is that our problem?

Nono: she was emotional and she came to us now please switch off the light I want to sleep.

I look at her as she pulls the blanket over her head. I'm pissed as hell I walk out to look for Max he must come get his wife I don't find him in the kitchen I just see my mom busy in the fridge I go to his room I find him ready to sleep his in his boxers he looks at me and busts out laughing I'm fucking annoyed and his laughing.

Me: go get your wife I want to go sleep.

Max: well I tried but your wives refused with her.

Me: don't tell me nonsense Max I want to sleep between my wives. Where will I sleep?.

Max: there's the floor do you want a blanket and a pillow?

Me: you do know you a guest here right? I can chase you out or just call my mom on you.

He laughs again he really finds this situation amusing.

Max: like your mom would agree to chase out a guest who do you think is going to be chased out between me and you?

His right my mom will definitely take his side. I was about to say something when my mom disturbed us.

Mom: you two I can hear you from the kitchen why are you not sleeping it's late.

She's in a gown and holding a bowl of something.

Me: Ma Lilly is sleeping with my wives and Max refused to go fetch her I want to sleep.

Mom: and why is she sleeping with your wives?

Me: Max refused to give her ice cream so she's mad at him.

I say pouting my mom laughs.

Mom: then just sleep together the bed is big enough for both of you.

Suddenly dad is behind her with a gown too he holds her waist and looks down at her while she looks up at him.

Dad: what's taking you so long Ndlovukasi?

Mom blushes looking down.

Me: maaaaa.....!

They both look at me.

Dad: why are you two naked and alone in here?

Max: it's not what you think.

Max says quickly while dad chuckles.

Mom: well their wives ditched them tonight so they refuse to sleep together.

Dad laughs mxm this is not even funny.

Dad: my love leave them alone I've been waiting for those strawberries let's go please.

My mom blushes again.

Me: what are doing with strawberries at night shouldn't you be sleeping?

Dad: I'm going to do something that you couldn't do to your wives tonight since you will be dick kissing with Max.

I frown as he has a smirk my mom slaps his chest looking flushed then he spanks her.

Me: dad please stop doing that.

Dad: doing what? She's my wife I can do as I please with her.

My mom just pushes him out as he laughs. I turn back to Max and he throws me a pillow and blanket I hit him back with the pillow there is no way I'm sleeping on the floor.

Max: I'm not playing pillow fight with you Juice.

He says getting into the blankets. I undress and get in as well I pull the blanket and he pulls it back I also pull it back again I feel him turning around and next thing he kicks me off the bed I fall on the floor he grabs the blanket and pulls it up. This piece of shit I get up and take the pillow and start to hit him hard with it he just annoys me fuck! He grabs it and throws it right at my face.

Max: juice! Fuck man! Just sleep!

Me: fuck you!

Max: you fucking childish take the other blanket and sleep!

He turns around and sleeps mxm I take the other blanket and sleep too I could be laying on soft boobs right now but no here I am with stupid Max.

Me: pussy..

I mumble.

Max: I will suffocate you with this pillow call me pussy one more time and see.

Me: mxm

I wake up in the morning and I see Max looking fresh he greets me and walks out I quickly fix the bed and go to my room I find it empty I take a quick shower and get dressed when I get down for breakfast I see Aunt Vuyi looking bruised with her daughter everyone is silent I greet them and everyone mumbles whatever I sit and Zizi gives me my food we silently eat soon as we done my dad clears his throat as he was about to say something but we get interrupted by four police officers walking in I know all of them since they on

our payroll they greet us they quickly look at me and Max and we greet back.

Dad: how can we help you officers?

1 police: uhmmm... we here to make an arrest for assault for Amanda Zungu.

We all go silent I look over at Max and I see him turning angry my aunts are smiling. My wives and Lilly stand up and walk towards the officers.

2 police: okay you must be Ulwazi, Nolwazi and Nthombenhle?

They nods their heads looking unbothered Lilly is just concentrating on her ice cream standing next to her sisters.

Nono: can we go now?

Me: Make sure they in one cell alone.

The officers nod.

3 police: Mam you cant take the ice cream with you.

Lilly: what are you going to do? Take it from me? I like to see you try.

She walks past them the officer looks defeated and just follows her I hope he doesn't try. Once they all out my dad sighs.

Max: Baba let me go get my wife.

Dad nods looking defeated. I also stand and walk out with Max we both lost in our thoughts I swear I'm going to kill that bitch Amanda nxa. The moment we get to the police station they don't give us problems we go to their cell we find them laughing and Zizi standing doing whatever that's making Nono and Lilly laugh with tears out I swear when God made these women I think he forgot to add something because any woman who goes to a prison cell should be scared ready to shit themselves but no these ones are having the time of their life. They don't even see us Max clears his throat they look at us and smile sweetly I shake my head I seriously give up on them I can't with them I seriously refuse. The officer opens for them Lilly is the first to come out running and throws herself into Max who pick her up I look at my two wives these two are still in trouble and they know it they

slowly walk out looking at me I raise my eyebrow then they start with their stupid dance I just turn immediately and walk away smiling I feel one of them jump on my back I hold her thighs on my sides Nono is now walking on my side I look down at her and she smiles at me.